1063 P 35

CHRIST

SET FORTH

In his { Death, Resurrection, Ascension, Sitting at Gods right hand, Intercession, } *As the* { Cause *of Iustification.* Object *of justifying faith.*

Upon Rom. 8. vers. 34.

Together with

A Treatise discovering the Affectionate Tenderneſſe of *Christs Heart* now in *Heaven*,

Unto Sinners on Earth.

By THO: GOODWIN, B.D.

LONDON,
Printed for *Charles Greene*. 1642.

DR. WILLIAMS'S
LONDON

To the
READER.

WHat the ſcope of this treatiſe it ſelfe is, the Title-page and the Table that followes, will ſufficiently informe you: I ſhall onely here acquaint you, with what was mine, in a few words. I have by long experience obſerved many holy and precious ſoules, who have clearly and wholly given up themſelves to Chriſt, to be ſaved by him his owne way; And who at their firſt converſion (as alſo at times of deſertion,) have made an entire and immediate cloze with Chriſt alone for their Juſtification, who yet in the ordinary courſe and way of their ſpirits, have beene too much caried away with the Rudiments of Chriſt in their owne hearts, and not after Chriſt himſelfe: The ſtreame of their more conſtant thoughts and deepeſt intentions running in the channell of

reflecting upon, & searching into the gracious dispositions of their owne hearts, so to bring downe, *or to* raise up (*as the Apostles words are,* Rom. 10 8.) *and so get a sight of Christ by them. Whereas Christ himselfe is* nigh them (*as the Apostle there speaks*) *if they would but nakedly look upon him selfe through thoughts of pure & single faith.*

And although the use of our own graces by way of sign and evidence of Christ in us be allowed us by God, and is no way derogatory from Christ, if subordinated to faith; and so as that the heart be not too inordinate and immoderate in poring too long, or too much on them, to fetch their comfort from the, unto a neglect of Christ: yet as pleasures that are lawfull, are unlawfully used, when our thoughts and intentions are too long, or too frequent, or too vehement in them, so as to dead the heart; either to the present delighting in God, or pursuing after him, with the joint strength of our soules, as our only chiefest good: so an immoderate recourse unto signes, (though barely considered as such) is as unwarrantable, when thereby we are diverted and taken off from a more constant actuall exercise of daily thoughts of faith towards Christ immediately, as he is set forth to bee our righteousnesse; either by the way of Assurance, (*which is a kind of enjoyment of him*) *or* Recumbency *& renued* adherēce *in pursuit after him.*

And yet the minds of many are so wholly taken up with their own hearts, that as the Psalmist says of God, Christ is scarce in all their thoughts:

But let these consider what a dishonour this must needs be unto Christ, that his train and favourites (our graces) should have a fuller Court and more frequent attendance from our hearts then himself, who is the King of Glory. *And likewise what a shame also it is from beleevers themselves, who are his Spouse, to looke upon their Husband no otherwise but by reflection and at second hand, through the intervention and assistance of their own graces, as Mediators between him and them?*

Now to rectifie this errour, the way is not wholly to reject all use of such evidences, but to order them; both for the season, *as also the* issue *of them: For the* season, *so as that the use of them goe not before, but still should follow after an addresse of faith first renewed, and acts thereof put forth upon Christ himselfe. Thus whensoever we would goe downe into our owne hearts, and take a view of our graces, let us bee sure first to looke wholly out of our selves unto Christ, as our justification, and to cloze with him immediately; and this as if we had no present, or by-past grace, to evidence our being in him. And if then whilst faith is thus immediately clasping about Christ, as sitting upon his Throne of Grace, we finde either present or fore-past graces comming in as Hand-maids, to attend and witnesse to the truth of this adherence unto Christ, (as after such single and absolute acts of faith, it oftentimes falls out.) The Holy Ghost (without whose light they*

reflecting upon, & searching into the gracious dispositions of their owne hearts, so to bring downe, *or to* raise up (*as the Apostles words are,* Rom. 10 8.) *and so get a sight of Christ by them. Whereas Christ himselfe is* nigh them (*as the Apostle there speaks*) *if they would but nakedly look upon him selfe through thoughts of pure & single faith.*

And although the use of our own graces by way of sign and evidence of Christ in us be allowed us by God, and is no way derogatory from Christ, if subordinated to faith; and so as that the heart be not too inordinate and immoderate in poring too long, or too much on them, to fetch their comfort from the, unto a neglect of Christ: yet as pleasures that are lawfull, are unlawfully used, when our thoughts and intentions are too long, or too frequent, or too vehement in them, so as to dead the heart; either to the present delighting in God, or pursuing after him, with the joint strength of our soules, as our only chiefest good: so an immoderate recourse unto signes, (though barely considered as such) is as unwarrantable, when thereby we are diverted and taken off from a more constant actuall exercise of daily thoughts of faith towards Christ immediately, as he is set forth to bee our righteousnesse; either by the way of Assurance, (*which is a kind of enjoyment of him*) *or* Recumbency *& renued* adherēce *in pursuit after him.*

And yet the minds of many are so wholly taken up with their own hearts, that as the Psalmist says of God, Christ is scarce in all their thoughts:

But let these consider what a dishonour this must needs be unto Christ, that his train and favourites (our graces) should have a fuller Court and more frequent attendance from our hearts then himself, who is the King of Glory. *And likewise what a shame also it is from beleevers themselves, who are his Spouse, to looke upon their Husband no otherwise but by reflection and at second hand, through the intervention and assistance of their own graces, as Mediators between him and them?*

Now to rectifie this errour, the way is not wholly to reject all use of such evidences, but to order them; both for the season, *as also the* issue *of them: For the* season, *so as that the use of them goe not before, but still should follow after an addresse of faith first renewed, and acts thereof put forth upon Christ himselfe. Thus whensoever we would goe downe into our owne hearts, and take a view of our graces, let us bee sure first to looke wholly out of our selves unto Christ, as our justification, and to cloze with him immediately; and this as if we had no present, or by-past grace, to evidence our being in him. And if then whilst faith is thus immediately clasping about Christ, as sitting upon his Throne of Grace, we finde either present or fore-past graces comming in as Hand-maids, to attend and witnesse to the truth of this adherence unto Christ, (as after such single and absolute acts of faith, it oftentimes falls out.) The Holy Ghost (without whose light they*

ſhine not) bearing witneſſe with our ſpirits, *that is, our graces, as well as to our ſpirits. And then againe, for the* iſſue *of them, if in the cloſure of all, we againe let fall our viewing and comforting our ſelves in them, or this their teſtimony, and begin afreſh (upon this encouragement) to act faith upon Chriſt immediately with a redoubled ſtrength: if thus (I ſay) we make ſuch evidences to be ſubſervient onely unto faith (whilſt it makes Chriſt its* Alpha *and* Omega, *the beginning and end of all) this will be no prejudice at all to Chriſts glory or the workings of faith it ſelfe; for by this courſe the life of faith is ſtill actually maintained, and kept upon wing in its full ure, and exerciſe towards Chriſt alone for juſtification. Whereas many Chriſtians doe habitually make* that *onely but as a ſuppoſed or taken for granted principle, which they ſeldome uſe, but have laid up for a time of need: but* actually *live more in the view and comfort of their owne graces, and the gracious workings thereof in duties towards Chriſt.*

The Reaſon of this defect among many other I have attributed partly to a Barrennes (*as* Peters *phraſe is*) in the knowledge of the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, *and of ſuch things revealed about him, as might be matter for faith to work and feed upon: As alſo to a want of skill (whilſt men want aſſurance) to bend and bow, and ſubjugate to the uſe of a* faith of meer adherence, *all theſe things that*

that they know and heare of Christ as made justification unto us. It being in experience a matter of the greatest difficulty, (and yet certainly most feasable and attainable) for such a faith, as can yet onely relie and cast it selfe upon Christ for justification, yet rightly to take in, and so to make use of all that which is or may be said of Christ his being made righteousnesse to us, in his Death, Resurrection, &c. *as to quicken and strengthen it selfe in such acts of meere* Adherence, *untill* Assurance *it selfe comes, for whose use and entertainment all such truths lie more faire and directly to be received by it. They all serve as a fore-right winde to* assurance of faith, *to fill the sailes thereof, and carry it on with a more full and constant gale, (as the word used by the Apostle for* Assurance *imports) whereas to the faith of a poore recumbent, they serve but as a halfe-side-winde, unto which yet, through skill, the sailes of such a faith may be so turned and applyed towards it, as to carry a soule on with much ease and quietnesse unto Christ, the desired Haven; It notwithstanding waiting all that while for a more faire and full gale of assurances in the end.*

Now to helpe or instruct beleevers in that latter, namely the use of such a skill, is not so directly the drift of this Treatise, I having reserved that part (if God assist me and give leisure, and this find accept ance) unto another about the acts of justifying Faith, *wherein this art now men-*

tioned is to be the maine ſcope. That which I have here endeavoured, is, to ſet forth to all ſorts of beleevers (whether they have aſſurance or not) Chriſt as he is the Object of our Faith as juſtifying, and as the cauſe of juſtification to us; and ſo I ſend forth this as a premiſe and preparatory to that other. And to that purpoſe I have run over ſome few Articles of our Faith, or Creed, as I found them put together in one bundle by the great Apoſtle, namely Chriſt, in his Death, Reſurrection, Aſcenſion, Sitting at Gods right hand, and Interceſſion, and have handled theſe no further, then as in all theſe he is made Juſtification unto us, therein having punctually kept unto the Apoſtles ſcope. By all which you may (in the meane time) ſee, what abundant proviſion God hath laid up in Chriſt (in the point of Juſtification) for all ſorts of beleevers to live upon: Every thing in Chriſt, whatſoever he was, or whatſoever he did, with a joynt voice ſpeaking juſtification unto us. You may ſee alſo that God hath in Chriſt juſtified us over and over; and thereby come to diſcerne what little reaſon you have to ſuffer your hearts to be carried aſide to other comforters, and ſo be ſpoiled and bereft of theſe more immediately prepared, and laid up for us in Chriſt himſelfe. To have handled all thoſe conſiderations, which his obedience unto death affords unto the juſtification of a beleever, and his comfort therein, in this ſmall tractate, would

have

have made that part too disproportioned to the rest: it alone deserves, and will require a distinct Tract, which therefore I have cast into another method; and so in this Treatise have toucht only upon what may for the present be sufficient to furnish that part, to keepe company with its fellowes. Onely when I had thus presented Christ along from *his* Death, Resurrection, *and* Ascension, *unto his* Sitting in Heaven, *and there performing that great part of his Priesthood, the worke of* Intercession, *I judged it both homogeneall to all these, and conducing to the greater encouragement of beleevers in the exercise of their faith, to subjoyne that other Treatise,* How Christs Heart now he is in Heaven stands affected to us sinners here below. *And a better token, (take the Argument it selfe, if I could have fully represented it) how to present unto his Spouse I know not, then a true* character *of her* Husbands heart *now he is in glory: And (but for methods sake)* I *would have placed it first, it being more suited to vulgar capacities, whose benefit I aime at. Now in that discourse I confesse I have not aimed to keepe so strictly unto the matter of justification onely, as in the other I have done; but have more generally discussed it, and shewne how his heart stands towards us, under all sorts of* infirmities *whatsoever, either of* Sinne or misery, *yet so as it will serve for the matter of justification also.* The Father

of our Lord Jesus Christ, grant us according to the riches of his glory, that Christ may dwell in our hearts by faith, and that we may know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge. *Amen.*

THO. GOODVVIN.

The

The Table: or, *Series* of all the Materialls in this Treatise.

Sect. I.

A generall Introduction *to the whole: Christ the Object of justifying Faith.*

Chap. I.

The scope of the words of the Text: That they were Christs originally. Christ the highest example of beleeving. Encouragements to our faith from thence. *Pag.* 1.

Christ an example of Faith, explained by two things. 2

1. *He had a faith for the justification of himselfe.* 3

2. *A faith for the justifying of us.* 6

Use. *To draw us on to faith, and encourage us therein.* 7

Especially against the greatnesse of sins. 9

Chap. II.

The scope and argument of this whole Discourse. 1. *A*

1. *A* Direction *unto* Christ, *as the* Object *of faith.*

2. Encouragements *to Beleevers in their faith, from these particulars in the Text.* 13

Christs
1. Death.
2. Resurrection.
3. Being at Gods right hand.
4. Intercession.

CHAP. III.

Directions to Christ as the object of Faith. How in a three-fold consideration, Christ is the Object of Justifying faith. 16

1. *As in joynt commission with God the Father. Faith is to eie both* God *and* Christ *in seeking Justification* 17
   Yet God *the ultimate object of it.* 18
   Yet Christ under the New Testament the more immediate Object. ibid.
2. *Christ the object of faith in opposition to all things in our selves* 21
   As 1. *To* Humiliation. *We are not to rest therein.* ibid.
   2. *To* Duties *and* Graces. *We are not to rest in them.* 23
3. *Christs* Person *is the object of Faith, in distinction from the* Promises. ibid.
   How the Promises *are the Object of Faith, and how* Christ in the *Promises.* 26

Three sorts of promises: and how Christs person is the object of faith in applying them all. 29

SECT. II.

Christ *in his* Death *the Object and support of faith for Justification.*

Chap. 1. How not Christs Person simply, but Christ as *Dying* is the object of faith as *justifying.* 32

Explained,

1. *By two* Directions,

1. *That in seeking forgivenesse, Christ as dying, Christ as crucified is to bee eyed by faith.* 33

How not Christs Person singly considered in the excellencies thereof; but as dying *is the object of justifying faith as such.* 35

Chap. 2. 2. *Direct.* That faith is principally to look unto the end & intent of God & Christ in his sufferings; namely, that sinners might have forgivenes. 40. 41

Without this, the meditation of the story of Christs Passion is unprofitable. ib.

Chap.

Cap. III 2. By shewing the *Encouragements* or matter of triumph that Christs death affordeth unto faith in point of justification. 50

The fulnesse of Christs satisfaction in his Death. ibid.

How Christs satisfaction may be opposed to the guilt of any sinnes whatever. 52

1. *Against the* hainousnes *of sinne (in the generall.)* 53

2. *Against any aggravation of particular sins: As* 54

1. *Against the greatnesse of the act of any particular sinne.* 55

2. *Against the* corruption *or* baanesse of

of the heart *in sinning.* ibid.
3. *Against* delight and greedineſſe *in ſinning.* 56
4. *Againſt deliberateneſſe in ſinning.* ibid.
5. *Againſt preſumption in ſinning.* 57
6. *Againſt the aggravating circumſtances of Time, Place, perſons, &c.* ibid.
The concluſion of this Section. 58

Sect. III.

Chriſt in his RESVRRECTION the object and ſupport of faith in point of Iuſtification.

Chap. I.

Two generall Heads propounded:

That

That Christs Resurrection { *Is an* Evidence *of* / *Hath an* Influence *into* } *Justification.* 61

1. *An* Evidence.
Christs Resurrection a visible sign that God is satisfied *by his death.* 63

2. *Hath an* Influence.
Though the matter *of our justification be the price of Christs* Death, *yet the act of pronouncing us righteous depends on Christs* Resurrection. 64

Chap. II.

A digression. Wherein for the explanation of both these, is shewne how Christ sustained a double relation. 66

1. *Of a* Surety *for us.*
2. *Of a* Common person *in our stead.* 67

The difference of these two; and the usefulnesse of these two considerations for the explaining what follows throughout this Discourse. 69.70

Chap. 3. (*The first Head.*) The *Evidence* of Justification *which Christs* Resurrection *affords to Faith* explained by two things. 1. How Christ was made a Surety for us. 2. How his Resurrection as hee was a Surety holds forth this evidence. 72

§. 1. *How Christ became a Surety.* for *Debt, punishment.* ib.

The Covenant of Grace made with Christ alone as a Surety for us. 75

Whereby God requires payment of Christ first. 76

§. 2. *How the consideration of this becomes an evidence to Faith through Christs Resurrection.* 78

The Resurrection and evidence.
1. *That the debt is paid.* 79
2. *That God will never claime it from the sinner.* 80

Chap.

Chap. 4. (*The second Head*) The *Influence* that Christs Resurrection hath into our Justification.

The Demonstration of this hath two branches.

1. *Bran.* That Christ was a Common Person representing us in all that he did, or suffered (Handled at large.) but more especially in his Resurrection. 82

This is proved,

1. *In generall, By a Parallel with* Adam, *Christs type herein.* 81
2. *Particularly, Adam & Christ were common Persons.*
   1. *In their Qualification and estates.* 83
   2. *In what they did, & in what befell them.* 84

Christ a Common Person in his Death, *we dying in him, as in* Adam *his* Condemnation *we were condemned in.* 85

That

That Christ was more especially a Common Person in his Resurrection, *we being considered as rising in him.* 91

Chap. 5. The second Branch, How Christs representing us as a Common Person in his Resurrection, hath an Influence into our Justificatino, made forth by two things. 94

1. *That Christ himself was justified from our sin at his* Resurrection, *made forth by three things.* 95
   1. *There was a solemne Act passed from God towards Christ, of justifying him from our sins* ibid.
   2. *There was some speciall time or season wherein this was done.* 97
   3. *That this was first past upon him at his* Resurrection. 98
2. *That all Beleevers were then justified by God in his justification of Christ as a* Common Per-

Person *representing them.* 102

Proved.

1. *From the Common and like analogie this holds with the former instances of our dying in his death, &c.* 103

2. *All things which God doth to us were first done to Christ for us.* ibid.

2. *From the equity of that Law that in* Adams *condemnation wee were condemned.* 105

Chap. 6. How our faith may from hence raise matter of Triumph *for its justification. Together with an explanation how wee are* justified by Faith, *although* justified in Christ at his Resurrection. 110

Chap. 7. How all this, both our justification at Christs Resurrection, and the support of our faith therefrom, *are sealed up to us in* Baptisme.

The Conclusion. How faith may make use of Christs Resurrection *in its going to God for pardon of sin.* 119

Sect. IV.

Faith supported by Christs being at Gods Right Hand.

Chap. 1. A connexion of this third Head with the two former.

Two things involved in it.

1. Christs Ascension.

2. Christs power and authority in Heaven. 126

Chap. 2. *Shewing*

1. What *Evidence* for our Justification,

1. Christs *Ascension* into heaven affords unto our faith, upon that first fore-mentioned consideration of his being a *Surety* for us. 132

And this,

1. *By considering what was the last action he did, when he was to ascend, namely,* blessing *his Disciples.* ibid.

For in blessing them, he blessed all Beleevers. 134

2. *From the very act of* Ascending. 135

3. *From the first entertainment that God gave Christ, when he made his entry into heaven.* 140

Chap

Chap. 3. 2. What *Evidence* Christs *sitting at Gods right hand* (he having beene our Surety,) affords to our faith for Justification. 142

It shewing,

1. *That* CHRIST *had compleatly performed all the worke that was to be done by him for our justification.* 145

2. *That God accepted his satisfaction, & was infinitly well pleased with it.* ibid.

Chap. 4. *Demonstrating*

2. What *Influence,*

1. Christs *Ascension* hath into a beleevers non-condemnation upon that second premised consideration, of Christs being a Common Person for us. 147

By considering two things,

1. *The great end of his Ascending, and entring into Heaven, that it was to prepare a place for us, and to bring us thither.* 148

2. *That he entred into Heaven, and tooke possession of it in our very names and stead.* 150

So that, we may by Faith behold our selvs as in Heaven already. 151

Chap. 5. Demonstrating

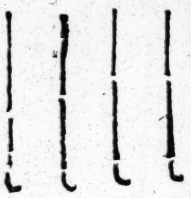
2. What *influence* Christs *sitting at Gods right hand* hath into our justification, upon that second consideration of his being a *common person.* 153

And this by considering,

The

1. *The prerogatives imparted in that his* sitting at Gods right hand. *As,*
1. *Soveraignty of power, all things being subdued to him.* 154
2. *Soveraignty of Judgement, all judgement and authority being committed to him.* 156
2. *That that these Prerogatives mentioned are his, as he is considered* an Head, *and so sits representing us, and therefore all his Elect shall one day come up to him.* 159

In what sense wee are said to sit with him: *and in what sense it is* Christs *priviledge* alone *to*



ſit at Gods right hand. 160

The Triumph of Faith from this. 161

SECT. V.

The Triumph of Faith from Chriſts INTERCESSION.

Chap. 1. A connexion of this with the former. And how this adds a further ſupport to faith. Two things propounded to be handled out of the Text:

1. The *concurrencie of Influence* that Chriſts *Interceſſion* hath into our Salvation: 2. The *Security that Faith* may have therefrom, for our Juſtification. 163

Chap. 2. *The firſt Head:* The concurrencie of influence Interceſſion hath into our ſalvation, *explained by two things.*

1. Interceſſion

1. Interceſſion *one part of Chriſts Prieſthood, and the moſt excellent part of it.* 166

Two parts of Chriſts office of Prieſthood (as there was of the High-Prieſts office under the Old Law.)

1. *To offer up himſelfe,*
2. *To intercede.* 167

Without Interceſſion Chriſt had not beene a perfect High-Prieſt. 170

His Oblation would otherwiſe have been ineffectuall. 177

Chap. 3. 2. The ſpeciall *peculiar influence* that Interceſſion hath into our Salvation an Juſtification; and the *Reaſons* why God appointed it to be added unto all the former. 179

Which are of three ſorts 180

The Table.

1. Respecting God.
   1. *In generall: God will be dealt with like himselfe.* ibid.
   2. *Particularly:*
      1. *In that it is for the glory of his free grace.* 181
         Which lookes to be entreated. 182
      2. *In that Gods justice stood upon such a respect to be performed to it.* 185

2. Respecting us. *Intercession being requisite to, and the best way to effect our salvation.* 186
   This demonstrated,
   1. *In generall: God would have us saved all manner of wayes.* ibid.
      And the application of Redemption unto us is from Christs Intercession. 187

2. *More*

2. *More particularly. Our justification depends upon it: As*
1. *The first Act of our conversion and justification depends on it.* 189
2. *The continuance of our justification depends on it.* 192
3. *A full security thereby given that we shall bee justified for ever.* *And this,*
1. *Against sinnes past.* ibid.
2. *Against our being condemned by new sins.* 195
Intercession principally intended for sinnes after conversion. 197

3. Respecting Christ. *Intercession ordained,*

1. *That none of Christs offices should lye vacant* 198

2. *That Christ might have a continuall hand in every work of our salvation, unto the last.* 200

Chap. 4. *The second Head.* The great *security* that our faith may have for our Justification, from Christs interceding for us,

Shewed

1. *By way of* Evidence.

And this by two things. 203

1. *The end of Intercession is actually and compleatly to save; so as if Christ did not actually and compleatly save those that beleeve im him through*

through his Intercession, hee were not a perfect Priest. 204

2. *Christs honour as a Surety, is deeply engaged by his Intercession to save us.* 209

Christ a Surety in his Intercession, as well as in his death. 210

The difference between these two Surety-ships. 211

Chap. 5. 2. By that powerfull *Influence* into our Salvation, and PREVALENCIE which Christs *Intercession* hath with God for us.

Demonſtrated,

1. *From the greatneſſe of the perſon who Intercedes, and his greatneſſe with God.* 214

And this ſhewne by two things.

1. *His nearneſſe of Alliance, he being Gods naturall Sonne.* 217

2. *His filiall obedience, hee being Gods* Obedient Son. 226

Two thinges in Chriſts Obedience, which make his Interceſſion prevalent. 228

Chap. 6. 2. From the righteouſneſſe of the cauſe he pleads, and that in juſtice. And how forcible the cry of his blood is, eſpecially himſelfe appearing to intercede with it. 231

Ex-

Explicated by two things.

1. *How an Interceſſion, and appeale to juſtice, is attributed to Chriſts blood.* 233
   Illuſtrated by the cry of Abels blood, and how far this exceeds that. 235
   In what ſenſe Chriſts blood is ſaid to cry. 238
2. *Chriſt himſelfe being alive, and following the cry of his blood, how prevalent this muſt needs be.* 239

Chap. 7.

3. From the abſoluteneſſe of his power, being able to doe what he askes of his Father. 244

Though Christ as he is a King, can command all things, yet to honour his Father he intercedes for what himselfe commands. 246

An Inference from the prevalencie of our prayers, how forcible Christs Prayers much more must needs be. 250

Chap. 8. 4. From the graciousnesse of the Person with whom Christ intercedes. For

1. *Christ intercedes with his* Father. 254

Chap. 9. 2. Hee intercedes with him who is our Father also. 264

Gods heart is as much enclined to heare Christ for us, as Christs heart

heart is to intercede. ibid.
The summing up of all. 273

Cap. 10. The Use containing some encouragements unto weake beleevers, from Christs *Intercession*; out of Heb. 7. 25.

SECT.

SECT. I.

SHEWING BY WAY Of Introduction, that CHRIST is the Example, and Object of juſtifying FAITH.

Rom. 8. 34.

Who is he that condemneth? It is Chriſt that dyed; yea, rather, that is riſen againe, who is even at the right hand of God, who alſo maketh interceſſion for us.

CHAP. I.

The ſcope of theſe words: that they were Chriſts originally. Chriſt the higheſt example of Beleeving. *Encouragements to our faith from thence.*

THeſe words are a triumphing challenge, uttered by the Apoſtle in the name of all the [*Elect;*] for ſo he begins it in the 33. *verſe* foregoing,

Who

Sect. 1. *Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods* [*Elect?*] *It is God that justifies*, And then follow these words, *Who shall condemne?* (namely, Gods elect,) *It is Christ that dyed, &c.* This *challenge* we finde first published by Jesus Christ himselfe, our onely Champion, *Esay* 50. (a Chapter made of, and for Christ) *ver.* 8. *He is neere that justifies me, who will contend with me?* They were Christs words there, and spoken of Gods justifying him; and these are every Beleevers words here, intended of Gods justifying them. Christ is brought in there uttering them as standing at the High Priests Tribunall, when they *spat* upon him, and *buffeted* him, as *ver.* 4,5. when hee was condemned by *Pilate*, then he exercised this faith on God his Father, *He is neere that justifies me.* And as in *that* his *condemnation* he stood in our stead, so in this his hope of his *Justification* hee speakes in our stead also; and as representing us in both. And upon this the Apostle here pronounces, in like words, of all the Elect, *It is God that justifies, who shall accuse? Christ* was condemned,

demned, yea, *hath dyed, who therefore shall condemne?* Loe here the communion we have with Christ in his death and condemnation, yea, in his very faith: if he trusted in God, so may we, and shall as certainely be delivered. *Observe* we first from hence by way of *premise* to all that followes. Sect. 1.

That Christ *lived by faith as well as we doe.* *Obser.*

In the 1 of *John, v.* 16. we are said to *receive of his fulnesse grace for grace*: that is, Grace answerable and like unto his; & so (among others) *Faith.* Christ an example of beleeving.

For Explication hereof. Explained.

First, in some sense he had a *faith for justification* like unto ours, though not a *justification through Faith*, as we have. He went not, indeed, *out of himselfe*, to rely on another for righteousnesse, for he had enough of his owne (he being *the Lord our righteousnesse*:) yet he believes on God to justifie him, & had recourse to God for justification: *He is neer* (saies he) *that justifies me.* If he had stood in his owne person meerly, and upon his own bottome onely, there had bin no occasion for such 1. He had a faith for the justification of himselfe.

Sect. 1. such a speech; and yet consider him as he stood in our stead, there was: for what need of such a justification, if he had not beene some way neere a condemnation? He therefore must be supposed to stand here (in *Esay*) at Gods Tribunall, as wel as at *Pilates*, with all our sins upon him: and so the same Prophet tels us *Ch.* 53.6, *God made the iniquities of us to meet on him.* He was now made *sin* & a *curse*, & stood not in danger of *Pilates condemnation* only, but of Gods too, unlesse he satisfied him for all those sins. And when the wrath of God for sin came thus in upon him, his faith was put to it, to trust & wait on him for his justification, for to take off all those sinnes, together with his wrath from off him, and to acknowledge himselfe satisfied, and him acquitted. Therefore in the 22. *Psal.* (which was made for Christ when hanging on the Crosse, and speaks how his heart was taken up that while) he is brought in as putting forth such a faith as here we speake of, when he called God his God, [*My God, my God*] then, when as to his sense, he had *forsaken him*,

him, [*why hast thou forsaken me?*] Sect. 1.
Yea, he helped his faith with the faith of the Fore-fathers, whom upon their trust in him God had delivered: *Our Fathers*, sayes he, *trusted in thee*; *they trusted, and thou didst deliver them*: Yea, at the 5. *ver.* we find him laying himself at Gods feet, lower then ever any man did, [*I am a worme*] (saies he) (which every man treads on, and counts it a matter of nothing for to kill) [*and no man*] as it follows; and all this because he *bare our sins*. Now his deliverance & justification from all these, to be given him at his resurrection, was the matter, the business he thus trusted in God for, even that he should rise again, and be acquited from them. So *Ps.* 16. (a Psalme made also for Christ, when to suffer, and to lie in the grave) *ver.* 8, 9, 10. *The Lord is at my right hand, I shall not be moved*: *Therefore my heart is glad, my flesh also resteth in hope.* Or (as in the Originall) [*dwells in confident surenesse*] *thou wilt not leave* [*my soule*] *in hell*, that is, under the load of these sinnes, and thy wrath laid on me for them, *neither wilt thou*

Sect. 1. *thou suffer thy holy One* (in my body) *to see corruption.* This is in substance all one with what is here said in this one word, *He is neere that* [*justifies*] *me*, for Christs *Resurrection* was a *Justification* of him, as I shall hereafter shew.

2. A faith for the justifying of us.

Neither 2. did he exercise faith for himself only, but for us also; and that more then any of us is put to it, to exercise for himselfe: for he in dying, and emptying himselfe, trusted God with the merit of all his sufferings aforehand, there being many thousands of soules to be saved thereby a long while after, even to the end of the world. He dyed and betrusted all that stock into his Fathers hands, to give it out in grace and glory, as those for whom he dyed should have need. And this is a greater trust (cõsidering the infinite number of his elect, as then yet to come) then any man hath occasiõ to put forth for himselfe alone. God trusted Christ before he came into the world, and saved many millions of the Jewes upon his bare word: And then Christ at his death, trusts God againe as much, both for the salva-

salvation of Jewes and Gentiles, that were to believe after his death. In *Heb.*2. 12, 13, 14, 15. it is made an Argument, that Christ was a man like us, because he was put to live by faith like as we are (which the Angels doe not) and to this end, the Apostle brings in these words propheſied of him, as ſpoken by him of himſelfe, [*I will put my truſt in him*] as one proofe that hee was a man like unto us. Now for what was it that he truſted God? By the Context it appeares to bee this, that he ſhould be the ſalvation of his *brethren* and *children*, and that he *ſhould have a ſeed and a generation to ſerve him*, and raiſe up a Church to God to praiſe him in. For this is made his confidence and the iſſue of his ſufferings in that fore-cited *Pſa.* 22. from *v.*22. to the end. Sect. 1.

How ſhould the conſideration of theſe things both *draw us on* to faith, and *encourage* us therein, and *raiſe* up our hearts above all doubtings and withdrawings of ſpirit in believing! For in this example of Chriſt we have the higheſt inſtance of believing that ever was: he truſted God

Vſe.

To draw on to faith, and encourage us therein.

Sect. 1. God (as we have seen) for himself, and for many thousands besides, even for all his elect; and hast not thou the heart to trust him for one poore soule? Yea, Christ thus trusted God upon his single Bond; but we for our assurance, have both Christ & God bound to us, even God with his surety Christ (for he is Gods surety as well as ours.) A double Bond from two such persons, whom would it not secure? If God the Father and God the Son thus mutually trusted one another for our salvation, whom would it not induce to trust them both, for ones own salvation, when as otherwise they must be damned that will not? 1. This example of Christ may teach & incite us to believe: for did Christ lay down all his glory, and empty himself, and leave himselfe worth nothing, but made a Deed of Surrendring all he had into his Fathers hands, & this in a pure trust that God would *justifie many by him,* (as it is in *Isa.* 53.) and shall not we lay down all we have, and part with what ever is dear unto us aforehand, with the like submission, in a dependance & hope of being our selves justified by him? and

withall 2. it may encourage us to beleeve: Hast thou the guilt of innumerable transgressions comming in, and discouraging thee from trusting in him? Consider but what Christ had, (though not of his own) Christ was made (as *Luther* boldly (in this sense that we speak of him) speakes) *the greatest sinner* that ever was; that is, by imputation: for the sins of all Gods chosen met in him: And yet he trusted God to be justified from them all, & to be raised up from under the wrath due of them. Alas, thou art but one poore sinner, and thy faith hath but a light and small load laid upon it, namely, thy own sins, which to this summe hee undertooke for, are but as an unite to an infinite number: *God laid upon him the iniquities of us all.* Christ trusted God for his owne Acquitance from the sins of all the world, and when that was given him, he yet again further trusted him, to acquit the *world* for his satisfaction sake. Sect. 1. Especially against the greatnesse of sins.

But thou wilt say, Christ was Christ, one personally united to God, and so knew that he could satisfie him; but I am a sinfull man.

Well

Sect. 1. Well, but if thou believeſt, and ſo art one of thoſe who are one with Chriſt, then Chriſt ſpeaking theſe words in the name both of himſelf and of his Elect (as hath been ſhewed) thou haſt the very ſame ground to utter them that he had, and all that encouraged him, may embolden thee, for he ſtood in thy ſtead. It was onely thine, and others ſins that put him in any danger of condemnation; and thou ſeeſt what his confidence before-hand was, that God would juſtifie him frō them all: And if he had left any of them unſatisfied for, he had not been juſtified; and withall in performing his own part undertaken by him, he performed thine alſo, & ſo in his being juſtified, thou wert juſtified alſo: his *confidence then*, may therfore be thine *now*: onely *his* was *in* & from *himſelf*, but *thine* muſt be *on him*: yet ſo, as by *reaſon* of thy *communion* with him in his both *condemnation* & *juſtification*, thou mayſt take and turne all that emboldned him to this his truſt and confidence, to embolden thee alſo in thine, as truly as he did for himſelfe. Yea, in this thou haſt now a farther

farther prop and encouragement to thy faith, then he then had; for *now* (when thou art to believe) Christ hath *fully performed* the satisfaction he undertooke; and we *now see Jesus crucified*, acquited, yea *crowned with glory and honour*, as the Apostle speaks: But he, when he took up this *triumph*, was (as *Esay* here foretold and propheſied it of him) but as then entring upon that work. The Prophet *seeing the day* of his arraignment and Agony, utters these words as his; shewing what thoughts should then possesse his heart, when *Pilate* and the Jewes should condemne him, and our sins come in upon him, *God is neere that justifies me, who* therfore *shall contend with me?* But now this comes to be added to *our* challenge here, that *Christ hath dyed, and is also risen again*; that he *was* condemned & justified, *who* therefore *shall condemne?* may we say, and say much more. Sect. 1.

But thou wilt yet say, He knew himselfe to be the *Son of God*, but so doe not I. Well, do thou but cast thy selfe upon him, to be adopted and justified by him, with *a giving up*

Sect. 1. *up thy ſoule* to *his ſaving* thee *his own way*, and (though thou knoweſt it not) the thing is done. And as for that (ſo great and uſuall) *diſcouragement* unto poore ſoules from doing this, namely, the *greatneſſe* and *multitude of ſins*, this very *example* of *his faith*, and conſideration of it, may alone take off, and helpe to remove it, more then any I have ever met with: for *He* in bearing the ſins of his Elect, did beare as great and infinitely more ſins then thine; yea, all ſorts of ſins what ever, for ſome one of his Elect or other, (for hee ſaid upon it, that *All* (that is, all ſorts of) *ſinnes ſhall be forgiven unto men*, and therefore were *firſt borne by him* for them) and yet you ſee how confident aforehand he was, and is now clearly juſtified from them all: And by vertue of *his* being *juſtified* from *all ſorts of ſins*, ſhall *all ſorts of ſinners in* and *through him* be *juſtified* alſo: and therefore why mayſt not thou hope to be from thine? certainly for this very reaſon our ſins ſimply and alone conſidered can be ſuppoſed no hindrance.

Thus we have met with one great and

and generall encouragement at the very Portall of this Text, which comes forth to invite us ere we are entred into it, and which will await upon us throughout all that shall be said, and have an influence into our faith, and helpe to direct it in all that followes. Sect. 1.

CHAP. II.

The Scope and Argument of this Discourse, is either direction to Christ as the Object of Faith, or encouragement to Beleevers, from all those particulars in Christ mentioned in the Text.

FAith and the supports of it, or rather *Christ*, as by his *Death & Resurrection*, &c. he is the foundation of *Faith*, and the cause of our Justification, is the maine subject of these words: All which therefore to handle more largely, is the intended subject of this Discourse. And therefore as we have seene Christs *faith for us*, so now let us see what *our faith* is to be *towards him*: Only take this along with you, for a

Sect. 1. right bounding of all that follows; That *the Faith* (the Object and support of which I would discourse of) is onely, *Faith as justifying*; for Justification was properly here the matter of Christs faith for us, and is also answerably here held forth by *Paul*, as that faith which Beleevers are to have on *him*. Now faith is called *justifying*, only as it hath *Justification* for its object, and as it goes out to Christ for Justification: So that all that shall be spoken must be confined to this alone, as the intendment of the Text. And concerning this, the Text doth two things.

Two things in the Text.

1. Christ the object of faith for justification.

1. It holds forth Christ the object of it, [*Who shall condemne?* [*Christ*] hath dyed. &c.] And hee being the sole subject of those foure particulars that follow, as encouragements to faith, must needs be therefore the object here set forth unto our faith.

2. His Death, Resurrection, &c. matter of triumph unto faith.

2. In Christ we have here al those foure made things matter of triumph to Beleevers, to assure them that they shall not be condemned but justified. In that

Christ

Sect. 1.

Christ { 1. Dyed. 2. Rose againe. 3. Is at Gods right hand. 4. Intercedes.

So that (for the generall) I am to doe two things: and therein I shall fulfill the Texts scope.

1. *Direct your faith to Christ, as to its right object.*

2. *To encourage our faith, from these severall actions of Christ for us,* and shew how they all containe matter of triumph for faith in them, and also teach your faith how to triumph from each of them: and herein I am to keep close to the argument propounded, namely, *faith as justifying*; or to shew how faith, seeking justification in *Christ*, may be exceedingly raised from each of these particulars, and supported by them, as by so many pillars of it. So as although *Christs* Death, Resurrection, &c. may fitly serve to encourage our faith in many other acts it useth to put forth, (as in point of Sanctification to bee had from Christ, into which his Death and Resurrection have an influence) yet here we are limited to the mat-

Sect. 1. ter of Justification onely, [*It is God that justifies, who shall condemne*, seeing *Christ hath dyed?*] and herein to shew how his Death, Resurrection, &c. may, and doe afford matter of comfort and triumphing in point of Justification, from all these. And thus you have the summe of these words, and of my scope in this ensuing Treatise.

CHAP. III.

First, Directions *to* Christ *as the* object of faith. *How in a three-fold consideration* Christ *is the object of justifying faith.*

Christ the object of faith three wayes.

BUt ere I come to encourage your faith from these, let me first direct and point your faith aright to its proper and genuine object, *Christ*. I shall do it briefly, and only so far as it may be an introduction to the Encouragements from these foure particulars, the things mainly intended by me.

1. Christ is the object of our faith in joint commission with God the Father.

2. Christ

2. Christ is the object of faith, in opposition to our owne Humiliation, or Graces, or Duties. Sect. 1.

3. Christ is the object of faith, in a distinction from the Promises.

First, Christ is the object of faith, in joynt commission with God the Father. So here, *It is God that justifies*, and *Christ that dyed*: They are both of them set forth as the foundation of a Beleevers confidence. So elsewhere, Faith is called *a beleeving on him* (namely, God) *that justifies the ungodly*, *Rom.* 4. 5. and *a beleeving on Christ*, *Acts* 6. Wherefore faith is to have an eye unto both, for both do alike contribute unto the justification of a sinner. It is Christ that paid the price, that performed the righteousnesse by which we are justified; and it is God that accepts of it, and imputes it unto us: Therefore Justification is ascribed unto both. And this we have, *Rom.* 3. 24. where it is attributed unto them both together, [*Being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ:*] Where we see, that Gods free grace, and Christs righteousnesse do concur to

1. As in joynt commission with God the Father.

Faith to eye both God & Christ in seeking justification.

Sect. 1. our justification. Christ paid as full a price, as if there were no grace shewne in justifying of us; (for mercy bated Christ nothing) and yet that it should be accepted for us, is as free grace, and as great, as if Christ had paid never a farthing. Now as both these meet to justifie us, so faith in justification is to look at both these, So it followes in the next vers. of that 3. *Rom.* 25. [*Whom God hath set forth to bee a propitiation* [*through faith*] *in his bloud.*] And though it be true, that God justifying is the ultimate object of our faith, (for Christ *leads us by the hand* (as the word is, *Eph.* 2. 18.) *unto God*: and 1 *Pet.* 1. 21. we are said *by Christ to believe on God who raised him, that so our faith and hope might be on God*) yet so, as under the New Testament, Christ is made the more immediate object of faith; for God dwelling in our nature is made more familiar to our faith then the Person of the Father is, who is meerely God. Under the Old Testament, when Christ was but in the Promise, and not as then come in the flesh, then indeed their faith

Yet God the ultimate object.

Christ under the New Testament, the more immediate object.

faith had a more usuall recourse unto God, who had promised the Messiah, of whom they then had not so distinct (but onely confused) thoughts; though this they knew, that God accepted, and saved them through the Messiah: But now under the New Testament, because Christ as Mediator, exists not onely in a promise of Gods, but is come, and manifest in the flesh, and is *set forth by God*, (as the Apostles phrase is) to transact all our businesses for us betweene God and us. Hence the more usuall and immediate addresse of our faith is to be made unto Christ; who as he is distinctly set forth in the New Testament, so he is as distinctly to be apprehended by the faith of beleevers. *Ye beleeve in God*, sayes Christ to his Disciples, whose faith and opinion of the Messiah was till Christs Resurrection, of the same elevation with that of the Old Testament-beleevers) *beleeve also in mee*: Make Mee the object of your trust for Salvation, as well as the Father. And therefore when *Faith* and *Repentance* Sect. 1.

Sect. 1. come more narrowly to be distinguished by their more immediate objects, it is *Repentance towards God*, but *Faith towards our Lord Jesus Christ*, *Act.* 20. 21. not but that God and Christ are the objects of both, but that Christ is more immediately the object of Faith, and God of Repentance: So that we beleeve in God through beleeving in Christ first, and turn to Christ by turning to God first. And this is there spoken, when they are made the summe of Christian doctrine, and of the Apostles preaching: And therefore the faith of some being much enlarged to the mercies of God and his free grace, and but in way of supposition unto Christ, or in a taking for granted, that all mercies are communicated in & through Christ, yet so, as their thoughts work not so much upon, nor are taken up about Christ; although this may be true faith under the new Testament, in that God and his free grace is the joynt object of faith, together with Christ and his righteousnesse, and the one cannot be without the other, and God ofttimes doth more emi-

eminently pitch the ſtreame of a mans thoughts in one chanell rather then in another, and ſo may direct the courſe of a mans thoughts towards his free grace, when the ſtream runs leſſe towards Chriſt, yet it is not ſuch a faith as becomes the times of the Goſpel; it is of an old Teſtament-ſtrain & *Genius*, whereas our faith now, ſhould in the more direct and immediate exerciſes of it, be pitcht upon Jeſus Chriſt, that *through him* (firſt apprehended) *our faith might be in God*, (as the ultimate object of it) as the Apoſtle ſpeaks. And ſo much for the firſt. Sect. 1.

The ſecond is, that Chriſt is to be the object of our faith, in oppoſition to our owne Humiliation, or Graces, or Duties. 2. Chriſt the object of faith in oppoſition to all in our ſelves.

1. We are not to truſt, nor reſt in Humiliation, as many doe, who quiet their conſciences from this, that they have beene troubled. That Promiſe, [*Come to me you that are weary and heavy laden, and you ſhall finde reſt*] hath beene much miſtaken; for many have underſtood it, as if Chriſt had ſpoken peace and reſt ſimply unto 1. Not to reſt in humiliation.

Sect. 1. that condition, without any more adoe; and so have applied it unto themselves, as giving them an interest in Christ: Whereas it is only an invitement of such (because they are most apt to be discouraged) to come unto Christ, as in whom alone their rest is to be found. If therefore men will set downe their rest in being *weary and heavy laden*, and not to come to Christ for it, they sit down besides Christ, and will lye down in sorrow. This is to make *John* (who only prepared the way for Christ) to be the Messiah indeed, (as many of the Jewes thought) that is, to thinke the eminent work of *Johns* Ministery (which was to humble, and so prepare men for Christ) to be their attaining Christ himselfe. But if you bee *weary*, you may have rest indeed, but you must come to Christ first: For as, if Christ had dyed only, and not arose, we had *been still in our sins*, (as it is 1 *Cor.* 15. 17.) so though we dye by sin, as slaine by it, (as *Paul* was, (*Rom.* 7. 11, 12, 13.) in his humiliation) yet if we *attaine not to the resurrection of faith*, (so the worke of faith is expressed, *Col.* 3. 12,

12, 13.) wee still remaine in our sinnes. Sect. 1.

Secondly, wee are not to rest in graces or duties; they all cannot satisfie our own consciences, much lesse Gods Iustice. If *Righteousnesse could have come* by these, then *Christ had died in vaine*, as *Gal. 2. ult.* What a dishonour were it to Christ, that they should share any of the glory of his righteousnesse? Were any of your Duties crucified for you? Graces and Duties are the Daughters of Faith, the Off-spring of Christ; and they may in time of need indeed nourish their mother, but not at first beget her. 2. Not in Duties or Graces.

In the third place, Christs Person, and not barely the *Promises of forgivenesse* is to bee the object of faith. There are many poore soules humbled for sinne, and taken off from their owne bottome, who, like *Noahs* Dove, fly over all the Word of God, to spy out what they may set their foot upon, and eying therein many free and gracious promises, holding forth forgivenesse of sinnes, and justification, they immediatly close with 3. Christs person the object of faith, in a distinction from the Promises.

Sect. 1. that condition, without any more adoe; and so have applied it unto themselves, as giving them an interest in Christ: Whereas it is only an invitement of such (because they are most apt to be discouraged) to come unto Christ, as in whom alone their rest is to be found. If therefore men will set downe their rest in being *weary and heavy laden*, and not to come to Christ for it, they sit down besides Christ, and will lye down in sorrow. This is to make *John* (who only prepared the way for Christ) to be the Messiah indeed, (as many of the Jewes thought) that is, to thinke the eminent work of *Johns* Ministery (which was to humble, and so prepare men for Christ) to be their attaining Christ himselfe. But if you bee *weary*, you may have rest indeed, but you must come to Christ first: For as, if Christ had dyed only, and not arose, we had *been still in our sins*, (as it is 1 *Cor.*15.17.) so though we dye by sin, as slaine by it, (as *Paul* was, (*Rom.*7.11,12,13.) in his humiliation) yet if we *attaine not to the resurrection of faith*, (so the worke of faith is expressed, *Col.*3.12,

12, 13.) wee still remaine in our sinnes. Sect. 1.

Secondly, wee are not to rest in graces or duties; they all cannot satisfie our own consciences, much lesse Gods Iustice. If *Righteousnesse could have come* by these, then *Christ had died in vaine*, as *Gal. 2. ult.* What a dishonour were it to Christ, that they should share any of the glory of his righteousnesse? Were any of your Duties crucified for you? Graces and Duties are the Daughters of Faith, the Off-spring of Christ; and they may in time of need indeed nourish their mother, but not at first beget her. 2. Not in Duties or Graces.

In the third place, Christs Person, and not barely the *Promises of forgivenesse* is to bee the object of faith. There are many poore soules humbled for sinne, and taken off from their owne bottome, who, like *Noahs* Dove, fly over all the Word of God, to spy out what they may set their foot upon, and eying therein many free and gracious promises, holding forth forgivenesse of sinnes, and justification, they immediatly close with 3. Christs person the object of faith, in a distinction from the Promises.

Sect. 1. with them, and rest on them alone, not seeking for, or closing with Christ in those Promises: Which is a common error among people; and is like as if *Noahs* Dove should have rested upon the outside of the Arke, and not have come to *Noah* within the Arke, where though shee might rest for a while, yet could shee not ride out all stormes, but must needs have perished there in the end. But wee may observe, that the first Promise that was given, was not a bare word simply promising forgivenesse, or other benefits which God will bestow; but it was a Promise of Christs Person as overcomming Satan, and purchasing those benefits, [*The seed of the woman shall breake the Serpents head.*] So when the Promise was renewed to *Abraham*, it was not a bare Promise of blessednesse and forgivenesse, but of *that Seed*, that is, *Christ*, (as *Gal.* 3. 16.) in whom that blessednesse was conveied, [*In thy Seed shall all the Nations of the earth be blessed*] So that *Abrahams* faith

faith first closed with Christ in the Promise, and therefore he is said to *see Christs day*, and to rejoyce in embracing him: And so all the succeeding fathers (that were Beleevers) did, more or lesse, in their Types and Sacraments, as appeares by 1 *Cor.* 10.1, 2. And if they, then much more are we thus to looke at Christ, unto whom now he is now made extant, not in promises onely, but is really incarnate, though now in Heaven. Hence our Sacraments (which are the seales added to the word of faith) do primarily exhibit Christ unto a Beleever, and so (in him) all other promises (as of forgivenesse, &c.) are ratified and confirmed by them. Now there is the same reason of them, that there is of the promises of the Gospel, (for they preach the Gospel to the eye, as the promise doth to the eare) and therefore as in them the soule is first to looke at Christ, and embrace him as tendred in them, and then, at the promises tendred with him in them, and not to take the Sacraments as bare seales of pardon and forgivenesse: Sect. 1.

So

Sect. 1. So (in like manner) in receiving of, or having recourse to a Promise, (which is the word of faith) we are first to seek out for Christ in it, as being the foundation of it, and so to take hold of the Promise in him. Hence faith is still expressed by this its object, Christ, it being called *Faith on Christ.* Thus *Philip* directs the Eunuch, *Acts* 6. 31. *Beleeve on the Lords Jesus.* The Promise is but the casket, and Christ the Jewell in it; the Promise but the field, and Christ the Pearle hid in it, and to bee chiefly lookt at. The Promises are the meanes *by which* you believe, not the things *on which* you are to rest. And so, although you are to look at forgivenesse as held forth in the Promise, yet you are to beleeve on Christ in that Promise, to obtaine this forgivenesse. So *Acts* 26. 18. it is said of beleevers by Christ himselfe, [*That they may obtaine forgivenesse of sinnes, by faith which is on mee.*]

How the Promises are the object of faith. How Christ in the Promises.

And to cleare it farther, we must conceive, that the Promises of Forgivenesse are not as the pardons of

a Prince, which meerly containe an expreſſion of his royall word for pardoning, ſo as we in ſeeking of it, doe reſt upon, and have to doe only with his word and ſeale which we have to ſhew for it: but Gods Promiſes of pardon are made in his Sonne, and are as if a Prince ſhould offer to pardon a Traitor upon marriage with his child, whom in, and with that pardon he offers in ſuch a relation; ſo as all that would have pardon, muſt firſt ſeek out for his child: and thus it is in the matter of beleeving. The reaſon of which is, becauſe Chriſt is the Grand Promiſe, in whom *all the Promiſes are Yea and Amen*, 2 *Cor.* 11. 29. and therefore he is called *The Covenant*, *Eſay* 49. 8. So that, as it were folly for any man to thinke that hee hath an intereſt in an Heireſſe lands, becauſe hee hath got the writings of her eſtate into his hands (whereas the intereſt in the lands goes with her perſon, and with the relation of marriage to her; otherwiſe, without a title to her ſelfe, all the writings will be fetcht out of his hands again) ſo is it with all the Promiſes; Sect. 1.

they

Sect. 1. they hang all upon Christ, and without him there is no interest to be had in them: *He that hath the Sonne, hath life,* John 1. 5. 12. because Life is by Gods appointment onely in him, as *Verse* 11. All the promises are as Copy-hold Land, which when you would interest your selves in, you enquire upon what Lord it holds, and you take it up of him, as well as get the Evidences and Deeds for it into your hands; the Lord of it will be acknowledged for such in passing his right into your hands: Now this is the tenure of all the promises; they all hold on Christ, in whom they are *Yea* and *Amen*; and you must take them up of him. Thus the Apostles preached forgivenesse to men, *Acts* 13. 38. *Bee it knowne that through this man is preached to you the forgivenesse of sins.* And as *they preached,* so we *are to believe,* as the Apostle speaks, 1 *Cor.* 15. 11. And without this to rest on the bare promise, or to looke to the benefit promised without eying Christ, is not an Evangelicall, but a Jewish faith, even such as the Formalists

maliſts among the Jewes had, who without the Meſſiah cloſed with promiſes, and reſted in Types to cleanſe them, without looking unto Christ the end of them, and as propounded to their faith in them. This is to goe to God without a Mediator, and to make the promiſes of the Goſpel to be as the promiſes of the Law, *Nehuſhtan*, (as *Hezekiah* ſaid of the *Braſen Serpent*) a piece of braſſe, vaine, and ineffectuall; like the waters of Bethesda, they heale not, they cleanſe not, till this *Angel of the Covenant* come downe to your faith in them: Therefore at a Sacrament, or when you meet with any promiſe, get Christ firſt downe by faith, and then let your faith propound what it would have, and you may have what you will of him. Sect. 1.

There are three ſorts of promiſes, and in the applying of all theſe, it is Christ that your faith is to meet with. Three ſorts of Promiſes, and how Christs Perſon is the obj. of faith in app'ying them all.

Firſt, there are *Abſolute* promiſes, made to no Conditions; as when Christ is ſaid to *come to ſave ſinners*, &c. Now in

Sect. 1. in theſe it is plaine, that Chriſt is the naked object of them: ſo that if you apply not him, you apply nothing, for the onely thing held forth in them is Chriſt.

2. There are *inviting promiſes*; as that before mentioned, [*come to mee you that are weary.*] The promiſe is not to wearineſſe, but to comming to Chriſt; they are bidden *come to him*, if they will have reſt.

3. There are *aſſuring promiſes*; as thoſe made to ſuch and ſuch qualifications of ſanctification, &c. But ſtill what is it that is promiſed in them, which the heart ſhould onely eye? It is Chriſt, in whom the ſoule reſts, and hath comfort in, and not in its grace; ſo that the ſight of a mans grace is but a backe-doore to let faith in at, to converſe with Chriſt, whom the ſoule loves. Even as at the Sacrament, the Elements of Bread and Wine are but outward ſignes to bring Chriſt and the heart together, and then faith lets the outward elements goe, and cloſeth, and treats immediately with Chriſt, unto whom theſe let the ſoule in: So Grace is a ſigne inward,

ward, and whilſt men make uſe of it onely as of a bare ſigne to let them in unto Chriſt, and their rejoycing is not in it, but in Chriſt, their confidence being pitcht upon him, and not upon their grace; whilſt men take this courſe, there is and will bee no danger at all in making ſuch uſe of ſignes: and I ſee not but that God might as well appoint his owne work of the new creation within, to be as a ſigne and help to communion with Chriſt by faith, as he did thoſe outward Elements, the works of his firſt creation; eſpecially, ſeeing in nature, the effect is a ſigne of the cauſe. Neither is it more derogatory to free grace, or to Chriſts honour, for God to make ſuch effects, ſignes of our union with him, then it was to make outward ſignes of his preſence. Sect. 1.

SECT.

SECT. II.

CHRIST THE OBject and ſupport of Faith for Juſtification, in his DEATH.

Rom. 8. 34.
Who ſhall condemne? Chriſt hath dyed.

CHAP. I.

How not Chriſts Perſon ſimply, but Chriſt as dying is the object of Faith as juſtifying.

TO come now to all thoſe foure particulars of or about Chriſt, as the object of faith here mentioned; and to ſhew both how Chriſt in each is the object of faith as juſtifying; and what ſupport or encouragement the faith of a Beleever may fetch from each of them in point of Juſtification, which is the Argument of the maine body of this Diſcourſe.

Firſt,

First, *Christ as dying* is the object of justifying faith, [*Who shall condemne? Christ hath dyed.*] Sect. 2.

For the explanation of which, I will Explained 1. By two Directions.

1. Give a direction or two.

2. To shew how an encouragement, or matter of triumph, may from hence be fetcht.

1. The first direction is this, That in seeking forgiveness or justification in the promises, as Christ is to be principally in the eye of your faith, so it must be Christ *as* crucified, Christ *as dying*, as here he is made. It was the Serpent as lift up, and so looked at, that healed them. Now this direction I give to prevent a mistake which soules that are about to beleeve, doe often run into: For when they heare that the person of Christ is the maine object of faith, they thus conceive of it, that when one comes first to believe, he should looke onely upon the personall excellencies of Grace & Glory which are in Jesus Christ, which follow upon the Hypostaticall Union; and so have his heart allured in unto Christ by them onely, & close with him 1. Direction.

Sect. 2. him under those apprehensions alone. But although it be true, that there is that radicall disposition in the faith of every Beleever, which if it were drawne forth to view Christ in his meere personall excellencies abstractively considered, would close with Christ for them alone, as seeing such a beauty and suitablenesse in them; yet the first view which an humbled soule alwayes doth, and is to take of him, is of his being a *Saviour*, made *sinne*, and a *curse*, and obeying to the death for sinners. Hee takes up Christ in his first sight of him,

Rom. 8. 3. under the *likenesse of sinfull flesh*, (for so the Gospel first represents him, though it holds forth his personall excellencies also) and in that representation it is, that he is made a fit object for a sinners faith to trust and rest upon, for salvation; which in part distinguisheth a sinners faith whilst here on earth, towards Christ, from that vision or sight which Angels and the soules of men have in heaven of him. Faith here views him not onely as glorious at Gods right hand (though so also) but as crucified,

crucified, as made ſin, and a curſe, and ſo reſts upon him for pardon; but in heaven we ſhall *ſee him as hee is*, and be made like unto him. Take Chriſt in his perſonall excellencies ſimply conſidered, and ſo with them propounded as an Head to us, and hee might have beene a fit object for Angels and men even without ſin to have cloſed withall; and what an addition to their happineſſe would they have thought it, to have him for their husband! but yet ſo conſidered, he ſhould have been, and rather is the object of *love*, then of *faith* or affiance. It is therefore Chriſt that is thus excellent in his perſon, yet farther conſidered, as clothed with his garments of blood, and the qualifications of a Mediator and Reconciler; it is this that makes him ſo deſirable by ſinners, and a fit object for their faith (which looks out for juſtification) to prey and ſeize upon, though they take in the conſideration of all his other excellencies to allure their hearts to him, and confirme their choice of him. Yea, I ſay farther, that conſider faith *as juſtifying*, that is, Sect. 2.

Sect. 2. is, in that act of it which juſtifies a ſinner; and ſo, Chriſt taken onely or mainly in his Perſonal excellencies, cannot properly be called the object of it: but the *formalis ratio*, the proper reſpect or conſideration that maketh Chriſt the object of faith as juſtifying, muſt neceſſarily be that in Chriſt, which doth indeed juſtifie a ſinner; which is his obedience unto death. For the act and object of every habit or faculty, are alwaies ſuited, and ſimilar each to other; and therefore Chriſt juſtifying muſt needs be the object of Faith juſtifying. It is true, that there is nothing in Chriſt with which ſome anſwerable act of faith in us doth not cloſe; and from the differing conſiderations under which faith lookes at Chriſt, have thoſe ſeverall acts of faith various denominations: As faith, that is carried forth to Chriſt and his perſonall excellencies, may be called *uniting* faith; and faith that goes forth to Chriſt for ſtrength of grace to ſubdue ſinne, may (anſwerably to its object) bee called *Sanctifying* faith; and faith as it goes forth

forth to Christ (as dying, &c.) for justification, may be called *justifying* faith: For faith in that act looks at what in Christ doth justifie a sinner; and therefore Christ considered as dying, rising, &c. doth in this respect become the most pleasing and gratefull object to a soule that is humbled; for this makes Christ suitable to him as hee is a sinner, under which consideration he reflects upon himself, when he is first humbled. And therefore thus to represent Christ to Beleevers under the Law, was the maine scope of all the Sacrifices and Types therein, *All things being purged with blood, and without blood there being no remission, Heb.9.* Thus did the Apostles also in their Sermons. So *Paul* in his Epistle to the *Corinthians*, seemed by the matter of his Sermon to have *knowne nothing but Christ, and him* as [*crucified,*] 1 *Cor.*2.2. as Christ above all, so Christ, as crucified above all in Christ, as suiting their condition best, whom he endeavoured to draw on to faith *on him*. Thus in his Epistle to the *Galathians*, he calls his Sect. 2.

Sect. 2. preaching among them, the *preaching of faith*, *Chap* 3 2. And what was the maine scope of it, but the *picturing out* (as the word is) *of Christ crucified before their eyes*, *ver.* 1. so he preached him, and so they received him, and so they *began in the Spirit*, *ver.* 3. And thus also doe the seals of the Promises (the Sacraments) present Christ to a Beleevers eye; as they hold forth Christ, (as was in the former direction observed) so Christ, *as crucified*; their scope being to *shew forth his death till he come*, 1 *Cor.* 11. 26. the Bread signifying *Christs body broken*, in the sufferings of it; and the cup signifying the sufferings of his soule, and *the pouring* of it forth *unto death*. And hence likewise, as faith it self is called *Faith on Christ*, (as was before observed) so it is called *Faith on his bloud*, *Rom.* 3. 24, 25. because Christ as shedding his bloud for the remission of sinnes, is the object of it: So the words there are, [*Whom God hath ordained to be a propitiation through faith in his bloud, to declare his righteousnesse for the remission of sinnes.*] And looke how God hath or-

ordained and ſet forth Chriſt in the Promiſe, under that picture of him doth faith at firſt cloſe with him. And one reaſon ſimilar to the former, may be grounded on the 24. *ver.* of that third to the *Rom.* *Being juſtified freely by his grace,* [*through the redemption that is in Chriſt.*] And as (I ſhewed before, in the reaſon of the former direction, that) all Promiſes hold of his Perſon, as being Heire of all the Promiſes; ſo the ſpeciall Tenure vpon which forgiveneſſe of ſinnes doth hold of him, is by purchaſe, and by the redemption that is in him. So that, as the promiſe of forgiveneſſe refers to his perſon, ſo alſo to this redemption that is in him. Thus both in *Eph.* 1. and *Col.* 1. [*In whom we have redemption through his bloud, even the forgiveneſſe of ſinnes.*] His perſon gives us title to all the promiſes, and his bloud ſhewes the tenure they hold on; a purchaſe, and a full price, (ἀντίλυτρον, an adequate price) 1 *Tim.* 2. 6. And as *ſin is the ſtrength of the Law,* and of the threatnings there of; ſo *Chriſts ſatisfaction is the ſtrength of all the* Sect. 2.

Sect. 2. *Promises in the Gospell.* In a word, an humbled soul is to have recourse to that Christ who is now alive, and glorified in heaven, yet to him as once crucified and made sinne. He is to goe to Christ now glorified, as the *Person from whom* he is to receive forgivenesse, &c. but withall, to him as crucified; as *through whom* (considered in that condition he then was in) he is to receive all.

CHAP. II.

What in Christs death, *faith seeking justification, is especially to eye and looke at.*

2. Direction.

NOw then a second Direction for faith towards *Christ* as *dying*, is, Faith is principally and mainly to looke unto the *end, meaning*, and *intent* of God and Christ in his sufferings, and not simply at the Tragicall story of his death and sufferings. It is *the heart, and minde, and intent of Christ in suffering*, which faith chiefly eyeth, and which draweth the heart on to rest on Christ crucified. When a Beleever

Faith is especially to looke at Christs end and mind in dying.

Sect. 2.

verſees that Chriſts aime in ſuffering for poore ſinners, agrees and anſwers to the aime and deſires of his heart, and that *that* was the end of it that ſinners might have forgiveneſſe, and that Chriſts heart was as full in it, to procure it, as the ſinners heart can be to deſire it; this draws his heart in to Chriſt, to reſt upon him: And without this, the contemplation & meditation of the ſtory of his ſufferings, and of the greatneſſe of them, will be altogether unprofitable. And yet, all (or the chiefe) uſe which the Papiſts, and many carnall Proteſtants make of Chriſts ſufferings, is to meditate upon, and ſet out to themſelves the grievouſneſſe of them, ſo to move their hearts to a relenting and compaſſion to him, and indignation againſt the Jews for their crucifying of him, with an admiring of his noble and heroicall love herein: and if they can but get their hearts thus affected, they judge and account this to be grace; when as it is no more then what the like tragicall ſtory of ſome great & noble perſonage full of heroicall vertues and

Namely, that ſinners might have forgiveneſſe.

Without this, the meditation of the ſtory of his Paſſion, unprofitable.

Sect. 2. ingenuity, yet inhumanely and ungratefully used) will worke, and useth ordinarily to worke in ingenuous spirits, who read, or heare of it: yea and this oft-times, though it be but in the way of a fiction: Which when it reacheth no higher, is so far from being faith, that it is but a carnall and fleshly devotion, springing from fancy which is pleased with such a story, and the principles of ingenuity stirred towards one who is of a noble spirit, and yet abused. Such stories use to stir up a principle of humanity in men, unto a compassionate love; which Christ himselfe at his suffering found fault with, as being not spirituall, nor raised enough in those women who went weeping to see the *Messiah* so handled, *Weep not for me*, (sayes he) that is, weep not so much for this, thus to see me unworthily handled by those for whom I dye.

And therefore accordingly as these stirrings are but fruits of the flesh, so humane inventions, as Crucifixes, and lively representations of the story of Christs passion unto

unto the ſight of fancy, doe exceedingly provoke men to ſuch devotionall meditations and affections: but they worke a bare hiſtoricall faith onely, a hiſtoricall remembrance, and an hiſtoricall love, (as I may ſo call them.) And no other then ſuch doth the reading of the ſtory of it in the Word, worke in many, who yet are againſt ſuch Crucifixes. But ſaving, juſtifying faith chiefly mindes, and is moſt taken up with the maine ſcope and drift of all Chriſts ſufferings: for it is that in them, which anſwers to its owne aime and purpoſe; which is, to obtaine forgiveneſſe of ſinnes in Chriſt crucified. As God lookes principally at the *meaning* of *the Spirit* in prayer, *Rom.* 8. ſo doth faith looke principally to the *meaning of Chriſt* in his ſufferings. As in all other Truths a Beleever is ſaid to *have the minde of Chriſt*, 1 *Cor.* 2. *ult.* ſo eſpecially he mindes what was the minde and heart of Chriſt in all his ſufferings. And therefore you may obſerve, that the drift of all the Apoſtles Epiſtles, is to ſhew the intent of Chriſts ſufferings; Sect. 2.

Sect. 2. how he was therein set forth to be a *propitiation for sin; to beare our sins upon the tree; to make our peace, &c. He was made sin, that we might be made the righteousnesse of God in him.* As in like maner, the scope of the Evangelists is to set forth the story of them, (for that is necessary to be known also.) And thus did that Evangelical Prophet *Isaiah* chiefly set forth the intent of Christs sufferings for justification, *Esay* 53. throughout the *Chap.* as *David* before had done the story of his Passion, *Psal.* 22. And thus to shew the use and purpose of his sufferings, was the scope of all the Apostles Sermons, holding forth the intent of Christs passion to be the justification and salvation of sinners: *This is a faithfull saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ came into the world to save sinners.* 1 *Tim.* 1.15. and they still set forth what the plot was, at which God by an ancient designment aimed at, in the sufferings of Christ, which was an end higher then men or Angells thought on, when he was put to death. And thus faith takes it up, and lookes at

Go back the 43 pages

it,

12 [illegible] Esay 45

it. And upon this doth *Peter* (in his Sermon, *Acts* 2.) pitch their faith, where having first set forth the hainousnesse of their sinne in murdering *the Lord of life*, then to raise up their hearts againe, (that so seeing Gods end in it, they might bee drawne to beleeve,) he tells them, that *All this was done by the determinate counsell of God, ver.* 23. and that for a farther end then they imagined, even for the remission of sins through his Name, as in the closure of that Sermon he shews. It was not the malice of the Jewes, the falsenesse of *Judas*, the fearefulnesse of *Pilate*, or the iniquity of the times he fell into, that wrought his death, so much as God his Father complotting with Christ himselfe, and aiming at an higher end then they did: there was a farther matter in it; it was the execution of an ancient contrivement and agreement, whereby God made Christ *Sinne*, and laid our sinnes upon him. God *was in Christ*, (not *imputing our sins* to us, but) *making him sin*, 2 *Cor.* 5. 20. Which Covenant Christ came (at his time) into Sect. 2.

Sect. 2. the world to fulfill: *Sacrifice and burnt offering thou wouldst not have,* (*Heb.*10.5.) *Loe, I come to doe thy will,* and that will was *to take away sins, ver.*4,10,12,14,15,16. These words Christ spake when hee tooke our nature, and when he came into the world, clothed with infirmities like unto us sinners, *Rom.*8.3. *God sent his Son in the likenesse of sinfull flesh, and for sin condemned sin in the flesh:* Marke that phrase [*for sin*] [περὶ] is there put for [*propter*] as *John* 10,33. [περὶ] καλοῦ ἔργου, *not for a good worke, or for a good workes sake.* So here, [*for sin*] that is, because of sinne; sinne was the occasion of his taking the likenesse of *sinfull flesh*: what, to encrease it? No, but to *condemne* it, as it followes: that is, to cast and overthrow it in its power and plea against us; that instead of sins condemning us, hee might condemne sin, and that we might have *the righteousnesse of the Law, ver.*5. This phrase for [*for sin*] is like unto that in *Rom.*6.10. [*Hee dyed unto sin*] that is for sins cause; for so the opposition that follows, evinceth, [*In that he liveth, he liveth unto*

unto God] that is, for God and his glory. So he dyed meerly for sinne, that sin might have its course in Justice, and for its sake suffered death, so putting to silence the clamour of it. The death of Christ was the greatest and strangest designe that ever God undertooke, and acted; and therefore surely had an end proportionable unto it. God that *willeth not the death of a sinner*, would not for any inferiour end will the death of his Sonne, whom he loved more then all creatures besides. It must needs bee some great matter for which God should contrive the death of his Son, so holy, so innocent, & separate from sinners: neither could it bee any other matter, then to destroy that which he most hated; and that was, Sinne: and to set forth that which he most delighted in, and that was Mercy. So *Rom.* 3. 25, 26. And accordingly Christ demeaned himselfe in it, not at all looking at the Jewes, or their malice, but at his Fathers command and intent in it. And therefore when he was to arise to goe unto that place where Sect. 2.

he

Sect. 2. he should be taken, and carried to slaughter, *As the Father gave me commandement*, (sayes he) *so doe I: Arise let us goe hence*, John 14.31. And when Judas went out at Christs owne provocation of him, *What thou dost, doe quickly*, (saies he) *the Son of man goeth as it was determined*: he lookt to his Fathers purpose in it. When he went out to be taken, it is said, John 18.4. *Iesus knowing all things that should befall him, went forth.* And when hee was in his Agony in the Garden, whom doth hee deal with but his Father? *Father*, (saies he) *if it bee possible, let this cup passe*: And God made his Passion of so great necessity, that it was even impossible that *that* cup should passe. Indeed, had Christ stood in his owne stead, it had beene an easie request, yea, justice to grant it; and so hee tells *Peter*, that he could command millions of Angells to his rescue; but he meerly submits unto his Father, *Not my will, but thy will be done*, for God had laid upon him the iniquities of us all, *Esay* 53.

Let our faith therefore looke mainly

mainely to this deſigne and plot of God and of Chriſt in his ſuffering, to ſatisfie for our ſins, and to juſtifie us ſinners. When we conſider him as borne fleſh and blood, and laid in a manger, thinke we withall, that his meaning was to condemne *ſin in our fleſh*, *Rom.* 8. 4. So when we read of him fulfilling all, or any part of righteouſneſſe, take we his minde in withall, to be, that the *Law might be fulfilled in us*, as it followes there, who were then repreſented in him; and ſo the fulfilling of it is accounted ours. Behold we him in his life time, as *John* the Baptiſt did, even as *the Lamb of God, bearing and taking away the ſins of the world*: and when upon the Croſſe, let our faith behold the iniquities of us all met in him: [*Surely he hath borne our ſorrowes,*] [*bearing our ſins in his body on the tree*] *and thereby once offered to beare the ſins of many*, *Heb.* 9. *&c.* This intent of Chriſt in all that he did and ſuffered, is that welcome newes, and the very ſpirit of the Goſpel, which faith preys and ſeiſeth on. Sect. 2. 1 Pet. 2.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

What support or matter of triumph Christs death affords to faith for Justification.

NOw having thus directed your Faith to the right object, Christ, and Christ *as dying*; let us secondly see what matter of support and encouragement faith may fetch from Christs death, for Justification. And surely that which hath long agoe satisfied God himselfe for the sins of many thousand soules now in heaven, may very well serve to satisfie the heart and conscience of any sinner now upon earth, in any doubts in respect of the guilt of any sins that can arise. We see that the Apostle here, after that large discourse of Justification by *Christs* righteousnesse, in the former part of this Epistle to the *Rom.* & having shewed how every way it *abounds*, *Ch.* 5. he now in this 8. *Cha.* doth as it were sit down like a man over-convinced; as *ver.* 31. *What then shall we say to these things?*

The fulnesse of Christs satisfaction.

He ſpeaks as one ſatisfied, and even aſtoniſhed with abundance of evidence; having nothing to ſay, but onely to admire God and Chriſt in this work; and therefore preſently throwes downe the Gauntlet, and challengeth a diſpute in this point with all commers: Let Conſcience and carnall reaſon, Law, and ſin, hel and Divells bring in all their ſtrength, *Who is he ſhall lay any thing to the charge of Gods Elect? who ſhall condemne? Paul* dares to anſwer them all, and carry it with theſe few words, [*It is God that juſtifies, it is Chriſt that dyed:*] And (as in *ver.* 37.) [*We are more then conquerours in all theſe.*] It was this that brought in the Prodigall, that in *his fathers houſe there was bread* [*enough.*] And ſo likewiſe he (who ever he was) who was the Author of the 130. *Pſ.* when his ſoule was in deep diſtreſſe by reaſon of his ſins, *v.* 1, 2. yet this was it that ſetled his heart to wait upon God, that there was *plenteous redemption with him.* Chriſts redemption is not meerly ἀντίλυτρον, a price or ranſome equivalent, or making due ſatisfaction according to Sect. 2.

the

Sect. 2. the just demerit of sin; but it is *plenteous redemption*; there is an abundance of *the gift of righteousnesse*, Rom. 5. 17. and *unsearchable riches of Christ*, *Ephes.* 3. 8. Yea, 1 *Tim.* 1. 14. [*the grace of our Lord* (that is, of Christ, as *ver.* 12.) ὑπερπλεόνασεν wee translate it, [*was abundant*] but the word reacheth farther, it *was overfull, redundant, more then enough*, And yet sayes *Paul*, *ver.* 13.) I had sinnes enough to pardon, (as one would think) that might exhaust it, *I was a blasphemer, &c.* But I found so much grace in Christ, even more then I knew what to doe withall.

I shall not insist so largely on this first Head of Christs dying, as upon those three following, because it is the maine subject of another Discourse (which, through Gods grace, I intend to publish, though in another method.) Onely (for a taste) to instance in some few particulars, shewing how Christs satisfaction may be opposed, and set against the guilt of a poore sinners offences. What is there that can be said to aggravate sinne in the generall, or any mans particular sins, that

How Christs satisfaction may be set against the guilt of any sins, and so made use of by faith.

12 leaves forward

page 53

that may not be answered out of this, *Christ hath dyed*? and something bee considered in it, which the conscience may oppose thereto? So that what ever evill, which according to the rules of spirituall reason, (which the righteous Law proceedeth by, and containeth as the foundation of its righteousnesse in condemning or aggravating sin) a mans conscience may suggest to be in sin; oppositely hereunto, may a mans faith, according to the like rules of true spirituall reason, shew a more transcendent goodnesse to have beene in Christs death (which the Gospel reaveales) and so may oppose the one to the other, and have as good reason to shew why sin should not condemne (from Christs death) as conscience can have, that the Law may condemne. Sect. 2.

As first, Is sin the transgression of the Law? *Christ* dying; the Law-maker, was subjected to the Law: and will not that make amends? Is sin the debasement of Gods glory, manifested in his Word and Workes? Christs dying was the debasement and

1. Against the hainousnesse of sin in the generall.

Sect. 2. and emptying of the brightneſſe of his glory in the higheſt meaſure, who was God perſonally manifeſted in the fleſh. The one of them is but as the darkning the ſhine or luſtre of the Sunne upon a wall, but the other is as the obſcuring of the Sunne it ſelfe. Sinnes higheſt evill lies in offending God; but Chriſts righteouſneſſe is (oppoſitely) the *righteouſneſſe of God himſelfe, or Jehovah made our righteouſneſſe*: So that God in our ſin is conſidered but as the *object againſt whom*; but God in this *our righteouſneſſe*, is *the ſubject from whom*, and *in whom* this righteouſneſſe comes, and is ſeated: And ſo his God-head anſwerably gives a higher worth to it, by how much the alliance which the Subject hath to an action of its owne, that proceeds from it, is nearer then that which an object hath, againſt which the action is committed.

2 Againſt any aggravation of particular ſins.

Or, ſecondly, what peculiar aggravations or circumſtances are there in thy ſinnes, to weigh thee down; with ſome circumſtances in Chriſts obedience and death

may

may not be paralleld, to lift thee up againe? Sect. 2.

As first, it is the greatneſſe of thy ſinne, in the ſubſtance of the fact committed? hath there beene lewdneſſe in thy wickedneſſe? (as the Prophet ſpeaks) conſider what guilt of how hainous crimes God ſuffered to be laid to Chriſts charge by profane men, when hee was made an offering for ſinne. He dyed as a Traytor to his Prince, and a blaſphemer of God in the higheſt kinde of blaſphemy, as making himſelfe equall with God; an Impoſtor, a Seducer, yea a Divell, yea a Prince of Divels, then whom a murderer was eſteemed more worthy to live. Which imputations, though by men unjuſtly charged on him, yet by God were ſo ordered as juſt, in reſpect of his bearing our ſins. For him who was holineſſe it ſelfe, to be made the greateſt of ſinners, yea to be *made ſin*, and the worſt of ſins, and accordingly to ſuffer from God and men; what greater ſatisfaction for the taking of ſins away can be deſired or imagined? 1. Againſt the greatneſſe of the act of any particular ſin what ever.

Or ſecondly, doſt thou aggravate 2. Againſt the badneſſe of the heart in ſinning.

Sect. 2. vate thy sins by thy naughtinesse of thy heart in sinning, and sayst that the inward carriage thereof hath beene much worse then the outward? Look thou into the heart of Jesus Christ dying, and behold him struggling with his Fathers wrath, thou wilt finde the sufferings of his soule more then those of his body, and in them to lie the soule of his sufferings.

3. Against the delight and greedinesse in sinning.

Thirdly, may thy sin be aggravated in that thou didst commit it with so great delight and greedinesse, and pouredst out thy heart unto it? Consider that Christ offered himselfe more willingly then ever thou didst sin: *Loe I come* (saies he, *Psal.*40.) *I delight to doe thy will*: and *how am* I *straitned till it be accomplisht*? *Luke* 12.56. And though to shew how great an evill and misery it was in it selfe, he shewed an averseneſſe to it; yet as it was his Fathers will for our salvation, hee heartily embraced, and drank off that cup unto the bottome.

4. Against deliberateneſſe in sinning.

Fourthly, didst thou sin with much deliberation, and when thou mightst have avoided it? There was this

this circumſtance in Chriſts ſuffe- Sect. 2.
rings to anſwer that, that hee *Knew all hee was to ſuffer*, and yet yeelded up himſelfe, as *John* 18.4.

Fifthly, haſt thou ſinned preſumptuouſly, and made a covenant with death and hell? Chriſt in like manner offered up himſelfe by a covenant and complot with his Father ſo to doe. 5. Againſt preſumption in ſinning.

Sixthly, Are there any eſpeciall circumſtances of time and place, &c. that aggravate thy ſins? 6. Againſt aggravating circumſtances of perſon, time, place, &c.

As firſt, that ſo great a perſon in the Church ſhould ſcandalize the Name of God in ſinning: Why, how great a Perſon was Chriſt? even equall with God the Father; and yet how greatly humbled? even to the death; his offices of King, Prieſt, and Prophet, being debaſed with him: how great a name had he? as *Heb.* 1.4. which notwithſtanding was diſhonoured more then ever any mans.

Or ſecondly, that thou ſinnedſt at ſuch a time, or in ſuch a company, which ſometimes ſerve to make a ſinne the more hainous. Conſider how God contrived to

have

Sect. 2. have the shame and affliction of his Sons death aggravated by all these circumstances: It was of deaths the most accursed; At a time most solemne; In a place most infamous; With company most wretched.

Thus might we finde out that in Christs sufferings and satisfaction made, that would fitly answer to any thing in our sins; and so thereby we should be the more relieved. And though the whole body of his sufferings doe stand and answer for the whole bulke of our sinnings; yet the consideration of such particulars will much conduce to the satisfying of an humbled and dejected soule, about the particulars of its sinnings.

Therefore (to conclude) get your hearts and consciences distinctly and particularly satisfied in the all-sufficiencie of worth and merit which is in the satisfaction that Christ hath made. As it is a fault and defect in humiliation, that men content themselves with a generall apprehension and notion that they are sinners, & so never become throughly

throughly humbled; ſo is it a defect in their faith, that they content themſelves with a ſuperficiall and generall conceit, that Chriſt dyed for ſinners; their hearts not being particularly ſatisfied about the tranſcendent all ſufficiency of his death. And thence it is, that in time of tentation, when their abounding ſinfulneſſe comes diſtinctly to bee diſcovered to them, and charged upon them, they are then amazed, and their faith non-pluſt, as not ſeeing that in Chriſt, which might anſwer to all that ſinfulneſſe: But as God ſaw that in Chriſts death which ſatisfied him; ſo you ſhould endeavour by faith to ſee that worth in it which may ſatisfie God, and then your faith will ſit downe as ſatisfied alſo. If a man were to diſpute for his life ſome hard and difficult controverſie, wherein are many great and ſtrong objections to be taken away; hee would be ſure to view, and ſtudy, and ponder all that might be ſaid on that other part which he were to hold, in way of anſwer to them, and to get ſuch a cleare and convincing light, Sect. 2.

Sect. 2. light, as might make the truth of his position apparent and manifest through those clouds of objections that hang in the way. Now you will all be thus called one day, to dispute for your soules, (sooner or later) and therefore such skill you should endeavour to get, in Christs righteousnesse, how in its fulnesse and perfection it answereth to all your sinfulnesse; that your hearts may be able to oppose it against all that may be said of any particular, in or about your sins; that in all the conflicts of your spirits, you may see that in it, which could clear your whole score; and that if God would but be pleased to impute it to you, you might say, I durst presently come to an account with him, and cut scores with his Law and Justice.

Thus much of the first thing made the object of faith, namely, Christ *as dying*.

SECT.

SECT. III.

FAITH supported by Christs RESURRECTION.

ROM. 8.34.

—*Yea rather, that is risen again.*

CHAP. I.

Christs Resurrection supporteth faith two wayes:

1. *By being an* evidence *of* } *our Iustificatiõ.*
2. *By having an* influence *into* }

The necessity of Christs Resurrection, *for the procuring our Iustification.*

THE next thing to be lookt at in Christ, as he is the object of justifying faith, (& from whence our faith may seeke and fetch support and comfort in the matter of Justification) is Christs *Resurrection*; upon which we see here, the Apostle putteth a [*rather*] *Yea rather that is risen againe.* There must therefore be some special thing in the Resurrection of Christ, which it contributes to our

Some special thing in Christs Resurrection for our Iustification.

Sect. 3. faith and juſtification, for which he ſhould have a [*rather*] put upon it, and that comparatively to his death. Now to ſhew wherein this ſhould lie, conſider how the Reſurrection of Chriſt ſerveth to a double uſe and end, in the matter of juſtification.

It ſerveth to a double uſe to ſupport our faith.

First, as an *evidence* to our faith, that God is fully ſatisfied by Chriſts death: his Reſurrection may give us full aſſurance of it.

Secondly, it had, and hath an *influence* into our Juſtification it ſelfe; yea and as great an influence as his Death had. In both theſe reſpects it deſerves a [*rather*] to be put upon it, and *Paul* had them both in his eie, when he writ theſe words. So as firſt, if you aske an account of his faith, & a reaſon of his ſo triumphant aſſurance, he alledgeth his Reſurrection to confirm it, *Chriſt is riſen.* Or Secondly, if you would have a reaſon of the thing, how it comes to paſſe, that we who are Beleevers cannot be condemned; *Chriſt is riſen*, ſayes he: He alledgeth it as a cauſe, that hath ſuch an influence into Juſtification it ſelfe, as it

it makes all sure about it. Sect. 3.

1. By way of Evidence: Although Christs obedience in his life, and his death past, do alone afford the whole matter of our Justification, & make up the sum of that price paid for us, (as hath beene shewn) so as faith may see a fulnesse of worth & merit therein, to discharge the debt: yet faith hath a comfortable sign and evidence to confirm it selfin the beliefe of this, from Christs *Resurrection* after his death: It may fully satisfie our faith, that God himselfe is satisfied, and that he reckons the debt as paid: So that our faith may boldly come to God, and call for the Bond in, as having Christs Resurrection to shew for it, that the debt is discharged. And hence the Apostle cryes *Victoria* over Sin, Hel and Death, upon occasion of (and as the *Coronis* and conclusion of that) his large Discourse about Christs Resurrection, 1 *Cor.* 15,55, 56,57. *O death, where is thy sting?* that is, Sin, and the power of it: for so it followes, *The sting of death is sin:* and *O grave, where is thy victory? Thankes be to God who hath given us*

1 By way of Evidence.

Faith hath a visible signe of it, that God is satisfied.

Sect. 3. *victory, through Jeſus Chriſt our Lord:* namely, as *riſen* again; for of his Reſurrection, and of that chiefly, had he ſpoken throughout that Chapter.

2. But ſurely this is not all, that it ſhould only argue our juſtification by way of evidence: This alone would not have deſerved ſuch a [*rather*] to be put upon it, if Chriſts Reſurrection had not had ſome farther reall caſual influence into Juſtification it ſelf, and been more then ſimply an evidence of it to our apprehenſions. Therefore ſecondly, in Juſtification, although the *materiale*, or matter of it, be wholly the obedience and death of Chriſt; yet the act of pronouncing us righteous by that his obedience, (which is the *formale* of Juſtification) doth depend upon Chriſts Reſurrection. Ordinarily there hath been no more expreſſed concerning this dependance, then that the Reſurrection of Chriſt juſtifies by working actuall faith, to lay hold upon what Chriſt hath done in his life and death, which is called the *applying* of it, (of which more anon.) But that

2. By way of influence.

Though the matter of our Juſtification be the price of Chriſts death, yet the act of pronouncing us righteous, depends on the Reſurrection.

that speech of *Paul*, 1 *Cor.* 15. 17. seems to import more, *If Christ bee not risen againe,* [*yee are yet in your sins,* [*and your faith is in vain:*] That is, although you could suppose faith to be wrought in you upon the merit of Christs dying, yet it would be *in vaine*, if Christ were not *risen* againe; for your title to Justification it selfe would be void: *You were yet in your sins.* Which is said, because his Resurrection was it, whereby sinnes (though satisfied for in his death) were taken off, and they acquited from them: Which I take to be the meaning also of that *Rom.* 4. *ult. He was delivered for our sinnes,* [*and rose again for our Justification.*] When the Apostle sayes, *for our sins he was delivered*, he meanes, his laying downe *that* which was the price for them, a satisfaction for them, which his death was: And in that sense, *He dyed for our sins*; that is, his death stands instead of our death, and so satisfies for sin. But yet still *that* upon which the act of Gods justifying us, & his discharge given us from our sins, and whereby he reckoneth us justified, that de- Sect. 3.

Sect. 3. pends upon his Resurrection. *He rose againe for our justification.* Note that Justification there imports the act of *imputation*, and reckoning us just, which he had spoken of in the verses immediately fore-going, *ver.* 22,23,24.

In a word, to the full discharge of a debt, and freeing the debtor, two things are requisite. 1. The payment of the debt. 2. The tearing or cancelling the Bond, or receiving an Acquittance for the freeing of the Debtor. Now the payment was wrought by Christs death, and the Acquittance to free from the debt, was at, and by his Resurrection.

CHAP. II.

For the explanation of both these is shewn, how Christ sustained a double relation; First, of a Surety for us; *Secondly, of a* Common person *in our stead: The difference of these two, and the usefulnesse of these two considerations, for the explaining all the rest that follows, in this whole Discourse.*

NOw the better to explicate both these, you must consider, how

how that Christ in almost all that he did [*for us*] (as the phrase is here, and is to be annexed to each particular) did stand in a double relation for us unto God. Sect. 3.

1. Of a *Surety*, bound to pay the debt for us, and to save our soules.

2. Of a *Common person*, or as an Attorney at Law, in our stead. And both these as they have a distinct and differing consideration in themselves, so those severall considerations of them will conduce to the understanding of those two things fore-mentioned, as wayes and arguments to shew how the Resurrection of Christ may support our faith, both by way of *evidence* that the debt is paid, and by way of *influence* that we are thereby acquited, and cannot be condemned. The notion of his being risen, as our *Surety*, clears the first, & that of his rising as a *Common person*, illustrates the other. And I shall here a little the largelier insist upon the explication of these two relations, because their consideration will be of use through all the rest that follows,

Sect. 3. to illustrate thereby both the evidence and the influence that his ascention, and Sitting at Gods right hand, &c. have into our Justification; and so I shall carry them along throughout this Discourse.

2. To be a Surety, what.

1. A *Surety* is one that undertakes, and is bound to doe a thing for another: As, to pay a debt for him, or to bring him safe to such or such a place, or the like; so as when he hath discharged what he undertook and was bound for, then the party for whom he undertooke is discharged also.

3. A common person what.

A *Common person* with, or for another he goes for, is one who represents, personates, and acts the part of another, by the allowance and warrant of the Law: so as what he doth, (as such a Common person, and in the name of the other) that other whom he personates, is by the Law reckoned to doe: and in like manner, what is done to him, (as being in the others stead and roome) is reckoned as done to the other. Thus by our Law, an Attorney appeares for another, & money received by him,

is

is reckoned as received by him whom it is due unto. Thus the giving possession of an estate, a reentry made, and possession taken of land, &c. if done by, and to a man who is his lawfull Attorney, it stands as good in Law unto a man as if in his owne person it had been done. So Embassadours for Princes represent their Masters: what is done to them, is reckoned as done to the Prince; and what they do according to their Commission, is all one as if the Prince, whose Person they represent had done it himselfe. In like manner also the marriages of Princes are transacted, and solemnized by Proxie, as a Common person representing his Lord, and in his name, is married to a Princesse in her Fathers Court; and the Lawes of men authorize it, and the marriage is as good, as if both Princes themselves had beene present, and had performed all the Rites of it. And thus to be a *Common person*, is more then simply to be a *Surety* for another, it is a farther thing: and therefore these two relations are to be distinctly consi-

Sect. 3.

The difference between these two.

Sect. 3. dered though they ſeem to be ſomewhat of a like nature. Thus an Attorney is a different thing from a Surety: A Surety undertakes to pay a debt for another, or the like; but a Common perſon ſerves to performe any common act, which by the Law is reckoned, and virtually imputed to the other, and is to ſtand as the others act, and is as valid, as if hee had done it: So as the good and benefit which is the conſequent of ſuch an act, ſhall accrew to him whom hee perſonated, and for whom he ſtood as a Common perſon. *Adam* was not a *Surety* for all Man-kinde, he undertooke not for them, in the ſenſe fore-mentioned; but he was a *Common perſon* repreſenting all Man-kinde: So as what he ſhould doe, was to be accounted as if they had done it. Now the better to expreſſe and make ſure our Juſtification in and by Chriſt, according to all ſorts of Laws, (the equity of all which God uſually draws up into his diſpenſations) God did ordaine Chriſt both to be a *Surety* for us, and alſo a *Common perſon* repreſenting us, and in our ſtead.

Adam a Common perſon but not a Surety.

Chriſt ordained to be both and the reaſon why.

stead. That as Christ took all other relations for us, as of an *Husband, Head, Father, Brother, King, Priest, Captaine*, &c. that so the fulnesse of his love might be set forth to us, in that what is defective in any one of these relations, is supplyed and expressed by the other: Even thus did God ordaine Christ to take and sustaine both these relations, of a *Surety* and a *Common Person*, in all hee did for us, thereby to make our justification by him the more full and legall; and *justifie* (as I may so speake) our *Justification* it selfe, or his justifying of us, by all sorts of *legall* considerations what ever, that hold commonly among men in like case; and that which the *one* of these relations or considerations might not reach to make good, the *other* might supply; what fell short in the one, the other might make up, and so we might be most legally and formally justified and made sure never to be condemed. Sect. 3.

CHAP.

Sect. 3.

CHAP. III.

The first head: *The* Evidence *of Justification which Christs* Resurrection *affords to faith; explained by two things:* 1. *By shewing how Christ was made a* Surety *for us.* 2. *How his* Resurrection *as a* Surety *holds forth this evidence.*

CONcerning the first of those two Heads at first propounded, namely, the *Evidence* which Christs Resurrection affords unto our faith in point of *non-condemnation*: I have two things to handle in this Chap. to make this out: First, how Christ was made a *Surety* for us, and what manner a *Surety* hee did become: Secondly, what the consideration hereof will contribute to that *evidence* which faith hath from Christs *Resurrection*,

Sect. 1. 1 How Christ was made and became a Surety for us.

For the first, Christ was appointed by God (and himself also undertook) to be our *Surety*. This you have *Heb.* 7. 22. *He was made Surety of a better Testament* or *Covenant*, namely, of the *New*. The Hebrew word for *Covenant*, the *Septuagint* still translated

translated [Διαθήκη] *Testament*: the word in the *Hebrew* being of a large signification, and comprehending both a *Covenant*, and *Testament*; and so in the New Testament it is used promiscuously for either: And indeed, this *new Covenant of Grace* is both. Of this Covenant Christ is the ἔγγυος, the *plighter of his troth* for it, the *Surety*, the *Promiser*, the *Undertaker*. The Verb this comes of, is ἐγγυάω, [*promittere*] which comes from ἐν χειρὶ, [*in manibus*] striking hands, or giving ones hand, as a signe of a covenant; and so to bargaine with, or make up a covenant. *Prov.* 22.26. *Be not thou one of them that strike hands, or of them that are sureties for debts*: Which whole verse the Septuagint reads, *Give not thy selfe* εἰς ἐγγυὴν, *to Suretyship*. The same word that is here used by the Apostle. It was the manner both of the Jewes and Romanes also, to make Covenants by *striking of hands*: And in Testaments, the Heire and Executor shooke hands with the Testatour, or the Executor gave his hand to fulfill it. And the word [ἐγγλυήσαντος] is used, not Sect. 3.

Sect. 3.

Suretiſhip not only uſed in matters of debt but in criminall cauſes puniſhed with death, and is put for being a pledge for another.

not onely in promiſing to pay a debt for another, but alſo in becomming a pledge for another, for to undergoe death, or a capitall puniſhment in anothers roome: as in that famous ſtory of friends, namely, *Euephenus* and *Eucritus*: *Eucritus* did [πξίωσεν ἐγγυήσασθαι] willingly become a ſurety for *Euephenus*, when condemned to dye by *Dionyſius* the Tyrant. This very word is uſed by *Polyenus*, the Hiſtorian of that fact. Now ſuch a *Surety* every way did Chriſt become unto God for us, both to pay the debt, by undergoing death in our ſtead, and ſo to ſatisfie God; and then as the *Heire* to execute his Wil and Teſtament: Hee became a Surety of the whole Covenant, and every condition in it, take it in the largeſt ſenſe; and this of all, both on Gods part, and on ours. For us he undertooke to God to work all our workes, and undergoe all our puniſhments; to pay our debts for us, and to worke in us all that God required ſhould be done by us, in the Covenant of Grace. And thus to be a ſurety, is much more then ſimply to bee

Chriſt undertooke as a Surety for both, to ſatisfie God, and to work all in us alſo

be an Interceſſour, or Mediatour, (as *Pareus* well obſerves.) God did (as it were) ſay to Chriſt, What they owe me, I require it all at your hands; and Chriſt aſſented, and from everlaſting ſtruck hands with God, to do all for us that God could require, and undertook it under the penalty that lay upon us to have undergone. Yea, Chriſt became ſuch a Surety in this for us, as is not to be found among men. On earth, Sureties are wont to enter into one and the ſame Bond with the Creditors, ſo as the Creditour may ſeize on which of the two he will, whether on the Debtour, or on the Surety, and ſo (as uſually) on the Debtor firſt, for him we call the Principal; but in this covenant, God would have Chriſts ſingle Bond: and hence Chriſt is not onely called the Surety of the Covenant for us, but *The Covenant*, *Eſay* 49. 8. and elſewhere. God making the Covenant of Grace primarily with him, and with him as for us, thereby his ſingle Bond alone was taken for all, that ſo God might be ſure of ſatisfaction: therefore hee laid

Sect. 3.

A ſtrange difference betweene Chriſts ſuretiſhip, and that of men for others on earth.

God makes the covenant of grace principally with Chriſt for us.

all

Sect. 3. all upon Chriſt, proteſting that hee would not deale with us, nor ſo much as expect any payment from us, (ſuch was his grace.) So *Pſal.* 89. 19. where the mercies of the Covenant made betweene Chriſt and God, under the Type of Gods Covenant with *David* are ſet forth, *Thou ſpakeſt in Viſion to thy holy One*, and ſaidſt, *I have laid help on one who is* [*mighty.*] As if God had ſaid, I know that theſe will faile mee, and breake, and never be able to ſatisfie me, but you are a mighty and ſubſtantiall perſon, able to pay me, and I will looke for my debt of you. And to confirme this, (then which nothing can give ſtronger conſolation, or more advanceth Gods free grace) when God went about the reconciling the World in and by Chriſt, and dealt with Chriſt about it, the manner of it is expreſſed to have beene, that God tooke off our ſinnes from us, and diſcharged us (as it were) meaning never to call us to an account for them, unleſſe Chriſt ſhould not ſatisfie him, and laid them all on Chriſt, ſo as he would require an account of

God requires payment of our debt from Chriſt firſt.

of them all from him first, and let him looke to it; and this he did to make the Covenant sure. Thus 2 *Cor.* 5. 19. it is said, (the Apostle speaking of Gods transaction of this businesse with Christ) that *God was in Christ*, namely, from everlasting, *reconciling the world* (of Elect Beleevers) *to himselfe, not imputing their trespasses to them, and made him sin who knew no sinne.* Observe, that as he laid our sinnes on Christ, so withall, he discharged us, in his compact between Christ and himselfe, [*not imputing their trespasses to them.*] So then, all laid upon Christ, and he was to look to it, or else his soule was to have gone for it. This is not the manner of other Creditours, they use to charge the Debt on both the Surety and the Debtour; but in this Covenant (of Grace namely) Christs single Bond is entred, he alone is *The Covenant*: so as God will have nought to say to us, till Christ failes him. He hath engaged himselfe first to require satisfaction at *CHRISTS* hands, who is our Surety. Sect. 3.

Now

Sect. 3. Now then 2. for to make uſe of this notion, for the clearing of the point in hand. It might affoord us matter of unſpeakeable comfort, onely to hear of *Chriſts* having been arreſted by God for our debt, & caſt into *priſon*, and his bond ſued, and an Execution, or *judgement* ſerved on him, as the phraſes are, *Iſa.* 53.8. For thereby we ſhould have ſeen how God had begun with our Surety, (as minded to let us alone) and that it lay on him to diſcharge the debt, who was ſo able to doe it: and thereby we might alſo ſee how he was *made ſin for us*, and therefore wee might very well have quieted our hearts from fearing any arreſts, or for Gods comming upon us, till we ſhould heare that our ſurety were not ſufficiently able to pay the debt (as you have heard he is.) But yet our hearts would ſtill be inquiſitive (for all that) to heare whether indeed hee hath perfectly ſatisfied God or no; and would be extreamly ſolicitous to know whether he hath ſatisfactorily performed what hee undertook, and how he got clear of that engagement, and of *being made*

2. How the conſideration of this is a ſtrong evidence to faith, of juſtification from Chriſts Reſurrection.

ſin

sin for us. And therefore the Apostle comforts beleevers with this, that Christ shall *the next time appear without sin.* * *Vnto them that looke for him he shall appeare the second time without sinne, unto salvation.* One would thinke it no great matter of comfort to us, to hear that Christ should appeare without sin; for who would imagine that it could be otherwise with *The holy One, the Lord of Glory*? there is no wonder in that: Ay, but (sayes the Apostle) your very salvation is interested in this, as neerly as is possible: It is well for you that Christ is now *without sin*; for he having as your Surety undertooke to satisfie for sin, and having accordingly beene *once made sinne*, when on earth, and arrested for it by God at his death; in that now he is got cleare of that engagement, (which could be no way, but by satisfaction, which he undertooke) this doth plainly evince it, and ascertain you, that you shall never be condemned for it: for by the Law, if the surety hath discharged the debt, the Debtour is then free. And therefore no newes would or could be more

Sect. 3.

* Heb. 9. 28.

It declaring unto faith, that Christ that was in this death made sin for us, hath now discharged all, and is without sin.

Sect. 3. more welcome to ſinners, then to have a certaine and infallible evidence given, that their Surety were well come off, and had *quitted all*, to ſatisfaction.

And ſo that God will never come upon the ſinner.

Now then to evidence this, ſerveth his *Reſurrection, Chriſt is riſen*: Nothing ſo ſure. Therefore certainly the debt is diſcharged, and hee hath paid it to the full, and ſo is now without our ſinne, and fully got cleare of it. For God having once arreſted Chriſt, and caſt him into priſon, and begun a triall againſt him, and had him *to judgement*, hee could not come forth, till he had paid the very uttermoſt farthing. And there is the greateſt reaſon for it, to aſcertaine us that can be: For he was under thoſe bonds and bolts, which if had beene poſſible would have detained him in the grave, as *Acts* 2. 24. *The ſtrength of* ſin, and Gods wrath, and the curſe againſt ſin, (*Thou ſhalt dye the death*) did as *cords hold* him, (as the Pſalmiſts phraſe is.) Other debtours may poſſibly break their priſons; but Chriſt could not have broke through this, for the wrath of the All-powerfull God

How ſtrong an evidence Chriſts Reſurrection is, that the debt is paid, and God ſatisfied.

God was this priſon ; from which there was no eſcaping, no baile: nothing would be taken to let him goe out, but full ſatisfaction. And therefore to heare that Chriſt is riſen, and ſo is come out of priſon, is an evidence that God is ſatisfied, and that Chriſt is diſcharged by God himſelfe, and ſo is now *without ſin*, he walking abroad again at liberty : And therefore the Apoſtle proclaimes a mighty victory obtained by Chriſts Reſurrection, over *Death*, the *Grave*, the ſtrength of *Sinne*, the *Law*, 1 *Cor.* 15. 55, 56. and cryes out, *Thankes be to God who giveth us the victory, through Jeſus Chriſt our Lord, ver.* 57. You may now reſt ſecure indeed, *Chriſt is riſen, who* therefore *ſhall condemne?* Sect. 3.

CHAP.

Sect. 3.

CHAP. IV.

The ſecond Head *propounded, the* Influence Chriſts Reſurrection *hath into juſtification. Two Branches of the Demonſtration of this. Firſt, that Chriſt was a* Common perſon, *repreſenting us in all he was, or did, or ſuffered, handled at large.* More eſpecially a Common perſon *in his* Reſurrection.

NOw ſecondly, to come to that other head propounded, the *Influence* Chriſts reſurrection hath into our juſtification. The demonſtration or making out of which depends on two things put together: The firſt, how Chriſt was appointed by God, and himſelfe acted the part of a *Common perſon*, repreſenting us in what he did, and *more particularly* in his Reſurrection. Of this in this Chapter.

The ſecond is, how from that conſideration ariſeth, not onely an *evidence* to our faith, but a *reall Influence* into our Juſtification, and non-condemnation. So as, *Who ſhall condemne?* becauſe Chriſt *is riſen again* as a Common perſon,

person, representing us therein.

Sect. 3.

Sect. 1. That Christ was a Common person proved. 1. In generall, by a parallel with Adam.

For the first of these, to illustrate and prove it in the generall, that instance of *Adam* serves most fitly, and is indeed made use of in the Scripture to that end. *Adam*, as you all know, was reckoned as a common publique person, not standing singly or alone for himselfe, but as representing all Man-kinde to come of him: so as by a just Law, what he did was reckoned to his posterity, whom he represented. And what was by that Law threatned, or done to him for what hee did, is threatned against his posterity also. Now this man was herein a lively type of our Lord Christ, as you have it, *Rom.* 5. 14. [*Who was the type of him who was to come.*] Unto which purpose, the titles which the Apostle gives these two, Christ and *Adam*, 1 *Cor.* 15. 47. are exceeding observable; he calls *Adam*, *The first man*, and Christ our Lord, *The second man*: and both for that very purpose and respect which we have in hand: For, first, he speakes of them, as if there had never been any more men in the world, nor were ever

The Type of Christ herein.

Sect. 3. ever to be for time to come, except theſe two: And why? but becauſe theſe two betweene them, had all the reſt of the ſons of men hanging at their girdle; becauſe they were both Common perſons, that had the reſt in like (though oppoſite) conſiderations included, & involved in them. *Adam* had all the ſons of *Men* borne into this world, included in himſelfe, who are therefore called *earthly men*, verſ. 48. in a conformity to him *the earthly man*, verſ. 47. and Chriſt the ſecond man had all his Elect, (who *are the firſt-borne*, and *whoſe names are written in heaven*, and therefore in the ſame *verſ.* are oppoſitely called *heavenly men*) included in him. You ſee how hee ſummes up the number of all men in two, and reckons but two men in all; theſe two, in Gods account, ſtanding for all the reſt. And farther obſerve, that becauſe *Adam* was in this his *being*, a Common perſon unto his, the ſhadow and the lively Type of Chriſt who was to come after him; that therefore hee is called, *The firſt Man*, (of

(of these two) and Christ *The second man*, as typified out by him. Sect. 3.

Now if you aske, wherein Christ was a *Common person*, representing us, and standing in our stead; I answer, If in any thing, then in all those conditions and states wherein he was, in what *he did*, or *befell him*, whilst *here on earth especially*: For he had no other end to come downe into this world, but to sustaine our persons, and to act our parts, and to have what was to have been done to us, acted upon him.

Particularly, In what things Christ was a Common person.

Especially in what he was, or did upon earth.

§. 2.

Thus first, in their two severall conditions, qualifications, and states, they both were *Common persons*: That is, look what state or condition the one or the other was made in, is by a just Law to be put upon those whom they represented. So the Apostle reasons from it, *ver.* 48. [*As*] *is the earthly man*, (namely, the first man, *Adam*) [*such*] *are the earthly*: namely, to be earthl, men as well as he; because he who was a Common person representing them, was in his condition but an *earthly man*: And oppositely, by the same Law, it follows, [*As*] *is the heavenly man*, (namely, the second man, Christ) [*such*] *are and must*

1. *Adam* and *Christ* Common persons, in their conditions, and qualifications, and states.

Sect. 3. *be the heavenly*, who pertaine to him, because he also is a Common person, ordained to personate them: and *Adam*, who came afore him, was therein but his Type.

And as thus in this place to the *Corinths* the Apostle argues Christ to be a Common person, in respect of his condition and state, by an argument of parallels taken from his Type, *Adam*; So secondly, in that 5. to the *Romanes*, he argues Christ to have been a Common person, in his actions which he did on earth; and this also from the similitude of *Adam*, whom *v.* 14. he therein makes to have been Christs Type. And he speaks of *Adam* there, as a Common person, both in respect of *what he did*, namely, his [*Sin*;] and also in respect of *what he fell him* for his sin, namely [*Death*] and condemnation. And because he was in all these not to be considered as a *single Man*, but as one that was *All men*, by way of representation: Hence both what he did, they are said to doe in him; and what condemnation or death was deserved by his sin, fell upon them all, by this Law of his being a publique person for them.

2. Christ a Common person, in respect of what he did, or what he suffered, illustrated by the parallel of *Adam*.

1. For what he did: He sinned, you know;

know; and *ver.* 12. *All are said to have sinned*, namely, in *his sinne*; Yea, and according to those words in the Greek, [ἐφ' ᾧ] which are added there, you may render that sentence (and the Originall bears it, and it is also varied in the Margent) thus, [*In whom*] *all have sinned*; namely, in *Adam*, as in a publique person. Their act was included in his, because their persons were included in his. Sect. 3.

1. *Adam* a Common person, in what he did.

And 2. for what befell him for sin, that befell them also by the same Law of his being a person representing them. Hence *ver.* 12. *Death* is said to *passe upon all men*, namely for this, that *Adams* sin was considered as theirs, as it there follows. It is said to *passe*, even as a sentence of death *passeth* upon a condemned Malefactor. And *ver.* 18. *Judgement* is said to *come by that one mans offence upon all men, to condemnation.* Now in *Gen.* 2. 17. the threatning was spoken onely to *Adam*, as but *one man*, *In the day that thou eatest thereof, thou shalt surely dye:* And *Gen.* 3 19. that sentence seems only to passe upon *him* alone, [*Unto dust thou shalt return.*] Yet in threatning *Adam*, God threatned *us all*; and in sentencing *Adam* to death,

2 *Adam* Common person in what befell him for what he did, as in death and the condemnation threatned.

Sect. 3. he ſentenced *us* alſo: The curſe reacheth us too; *Death paſſed upon all men* then, and therefore by a juſt Law *Death raigns over all*, as *ver.* 14. and 17. becauſe *Adam* was in all this, a Common perſon repreſenting us, and ſo in our ſtead; and ſo all this concerns *us*, as truly and as neerly as it did *him*. I ſay by a juſt Law; for indeed the Scripture upon the equity of this Rule, pronounceth a *Statute* out againſt *all men*, that they ſhould *dye*, *Heb.* 9.27. *Statutum eſt*, It is *appointed* by a Statute Law, that *all ſhould dye*. Now if you ſearch for this *Statute*, when and where enacted, you will finde, that the Originall Record and Roll is that in *Gen.* 3.9. ſpoken only of *Adam*, but holding true of us, [*To duſt thou ſhalt return.*]

Rom. 5.

§. 3. Anſwerably Chriſt ordained a Common perſon, both in what he did, or was done to him.

Juſt thus the matter ſtands in the point of our Juſtification and ſalvation, between Chriſt and Elect Believers; for *Adam* was herein his Type. Chriſt was conſidered and appointed of God as a Common perſon, both in *what he did*, and in what was *done to him*: So as by the ſame Law, what he did for us, is reckoned or imputed to us, as if we our ſelves had done

done it; and what was done to him, tending to our *Justification* and salvation, is reckoned as done to us. Thus when Christ *dyed*, he dyed as a Common person, and God reckoneth that we dyed also. When Christ *arose*, he rose as our Head, and as a Common person, and so then God accounts that we rose also with him. And by vertue of that *Communion* which we had with him in all those actions of his, it is, that now when we are *borne againe*, we doe all *rise* both from the guilt of sinne, and from the power of it; even as by vertue of the like communion we had with [illegible] being one in) *Adam*, we come to be made sinfull, when we begin first to exist as men, and to be first born. Sect. 3.

Thus in his death he was considered as a Common person, and God reckoned us dying then, and would have us *reckon* so also. So *Rom.* 6. 10. the Apostle speaking of Christ, saith *In that he dyed, he dyed unto sinne once, but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.* Then *ver.* 11. speaking of us, he sayes, [*Likewise reckon*] *you your selves to be dead unto sinne, but alive unto God, through Jesus Christ our Lord.* The Exemplified by one instance in *his dying.*

Sect. 3. meaning whereof is plainly this, that whereas regenerate men are for the present in the reality but *imperfectly* mortified and *dead to sinne*, as considered in themselves, and in respect of the work of it, as wrought in them; yet that being considered in Christ as their Head, and a Common person representing them, they may λογίζεσθαι, they may truly by a way of faith *reason* or *reckon themselves* wholly dead, in and through Jesus Christ our Lord; in that he once dyed perfectly unto sinne, as a *Common person* representing them. So as what yet is wanting in the work of Mortification, in their sense and experience of it, they may supply by faith, from the consideration of Christ their Head, even themselves to have dyed, when he dyed. The Apostle, I say, would have them by *reason* conclude or inferre (for I the word [λογίζεσθε] signifies, as *Chap.* 3.28. *Therefore we conclude*, or argue by reason, &c. it is the same word) *from Christs death, that they are dead*: which Conclusion cannot be made, unlesse this be one of the Propositions in this Argument, *That we dyed in Christ, when he dyed*; and so though

though in our selves we are not yet wholly *dead to sinne*, nor perfectly *alive to God*; *yet through Jesus Christ your Lord and Head* (sayes he) *reckon your selves so*, *in that* (as *ver.* 10.) *he dyed, and now lives*, and you were included in him. And indeed, this Consideration the Apostle suggests unto faith, both as the greatest encouragement against imperfect mortification begun; that yet we may comfort our selves by faith, as reckoning our selves wholy dead in Christs death, and so may assure our selves we shall one day be perfectly dead in our selves by vertue of it; and withall, as the strongest argument also and motive unto Mortification, to endeavour to attaine to the highest degree of it: which therefore he carries along in his Discourse throughout that whole Chapter. He would have them by faith or spirituall reasoning take in, and apprehend themselves long since dead to sinne in Christ, when he dyed; and so should thinke it the greatest absurdity in the world to sin, even the least sinne, we being dead long since, and that wholly, when Christ our Head dyed; Sect. 3.

Sect. 3. *And how ſhall we that are dead to ſinne, live any longer therein?* And *ver.* 7. *He that is dead, is free from ſinne*; and how then ſhall we doe the leaſt ſervice to it? Now all this he puts upon Chriſts dying, and our dying then with him: *ver.* 6. [*Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him*, (even when he was crucified) *that it might be deſtroyed*] one day in us, fully and pefectly: *Chriſts Body* repreſenting therein as a publique perſon, the Elect, and their *body of ſinne* conjunct with them. So as thus by faith they are to reaſon themſelves wholly dead to ſinne in Chriſt, and to uſe it as a reaſon and motive to ſtirre up themſelves not to yeeld to the leaſt ſinne. I uſe this expreſſion of being *wholly* dead, becauſe if he had ſpoken meerly of that *imperfect* mortification begun in us, the argument would not have been a *perfect* motive againſt the leaſt ſinnes. [*We who are dead, how ſhall we live in ſinne,*] or yeeld unto the leaſt ſinne? For it might be ſaid, Alas, we are but imperfectly dead; and from an imperfect death could but an imperfect argument have been drawn. But the Scripture elſewhere tells us, that

Chriſt

Christ by his death hath [perfected] for ever all that are sanctified; so *Heb.* 10. So as in his death they may reckon themselves perfectly dead by faith, and perfectly sanctified, though yet the worke be not actually and fully perfected. Sect. 3.

And all this communion with Christ as a Common person, representing them in his death, he there instructs them to be represented and sealed up to them by their Baptisme; so *ver.* 3, 4. How, I shall shew afterwards.

§. 4. More particularly, how Christ was a Common person in his Resurrection and therein representing us.

Now as this place holds forth Christ as a *Common person* in his *Death* representing us; so other places hold forth the like of his *Resurrection.* In the 1 *Cor.* 15.20. the Apostle argues that Elect Beleevers must and shall rise, because *Now Christ is risen from the dead, and is become the fruits of them that sleep.* See the force of this Argument founded upon this notion and consideration, that Christ was a Common person representing all the rest; and this strongly presented in that expression of his being *the first-fruits*, in allusion to the Rite in the Leviticall Law. All the sheaves in a

Sect. 3 field being unholy of themselves, there was one sheaf in the name and room of all the rest, (which was called the *first fruit*) which was lift up, and waved before the Lord; and so all the sheaves abroad in the field, by that Act done to this one sheafe, were consecrated unto God, (*Levi.* 23 10. *&c.*) by vertue of that law. The meaning of which Rite, the Apostle expounding, alledgeth *Rom.* 11.16 [*If the first fruits be holy, all the lumpe is holy also.*] Thus when we were all *dead*, Christ as the *First fruits* riseth, and this in our name and stead, and so we all rise with him and in him. And although the Saints departed are not, in their own persons, as yet risen, (as we all who are now alive, are not in our own persons yet dead) yet in the meantime, because thus they are risen in Christ, as their first-fruits; hence, in the very words following, he saith, they are but asleep, [*He is become the first fruits of them that sleep,*] because they remain alive in Christ their Head, and shall rise one day: because [*in him*] they virtually are already *risen*; and this in Gods account in as true and just a sense,

sense, as we (though personally alive) are yet all reckoned *dead in Adam*, because hee as a Common person had the sentence of death pronounced on him, by virtue of which we must dye; and this by the force of the same Law, even of that which we have inculcated of being a Common person, representing us. And indeed, to it followes, (which argues this to be the Apostles meaning) *ver.* 21. *For as in Adam all dye, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.* His argument lyes thus: *Adam* was the first fruits of them that *dyed*; *Christ*, of them that *rise*. Hence therefore we are elsewhere said (though in respect to another life) to be *risen with Christ*, *Eph.* 2.5,6. and (which is yet more) *to sit together with him in heaven*: because he as a Common person representing us, sits there in our name and stead, as you shall heare when I come to it in the Text, in the next Section. Sect. 3.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

The second branch: *How Christs representing us as a* Common Person *in his* Resurrection, *hath an* Influence *into our* Justification, *made forth by two things*: 1. *How Christ at his* Resurrection *was justifyed from our sinne*: 2. *That we were all then* justifyed *in him as a* Common person.

NOW then to come to the other branch of the Demonstration, namely, how this relation to us as a Common Person *representing us in his Resurrection*, hath a *reall influence* into our *Justification*: And this is the point I drive at; and for the clearing of which that large and generall discourse by way of digression in the former Chapter was but to make way for.

I shall absolve and dispatch this Branch, by shewing two things:

1. That Christ himself was *justified*, and that at his *Resurrection*.

2. That he was *justified* then as a *Common person*, representing us therein, as well as that he rose as a Common person; and so that *we* were then *justi-*

justified in him and with him; and by this means it is that by that *Act* then done to him, our Justification is made irrepealable for ever. Sect. 3.

§. 1.

For the explicating of the first: As Christ was in his death made sinne for us, and so sustained our persons in his satisfying for sinne by his death, (which is the matter of our righteousnesse) so in and upon his Resurrection he was justified and acquited from our sinnes by God, as having now fully satisfied for them, which I make forth by these three things put together:

1. That Christ himselfe was *justified* at his Resurrection Made forth by three things laid together.

First, in reason, if that Christ were made sinne for us, and satisfied for it, there must then some Act passe, whereby Christ should be pronounced acquit of our sinnes, and fully clear of them, and so be himselfe formally justified, in respect of those sins, for which he undertook to satisfie. For according to the course of all Proceedings, if a charge of guilt be formally laid, there must be as formall an Act of aquiting, and of giving a *Quietus est*: There is no man, but for his own discharge and security would desire it. Nor is there any wise

1. There must have been some Act passed from God, when Christ was acquited and justified from our sins by God.

man

Sect. 3. man that payes a debt for which he is legally ſued, that will not have upon the payment of it, as legall an Acquitance. *Paul*, when he was caſt into priſon by a publique Act of Authority, he ſtood upon it to have a publique Act of Releaſe from the ſame Magiſtrates, and would not goe forth of priſon privily, though themſelves ſent to him ſo to goe out, *Acts* 36. 37. Now God himſelf did *lay the iniquities of us all* upon Chriſt, *Eſay* 53 6. and *had him to priſon, and to Judgement* for them, *ver.* 8. There muſt therefore ſome Act paſſe from God, legally to take them off from him, and declaring him diſcharged, to deliver him from Priſon and Judgement.

That there was ſuch an Act paſſed.

And *de facto* it is evident, that there was ſome ſuch Act paſſed from God; for as we read, that Chriſt while he lived, and alſo in his Death, was *made ſin, and did beare the ſin of many*, as the phraſe is *Heb.* 9. 28. So we read in the very next words, that *he ſhall appeare the ſecond time* [*without ſinne.*] which muſt needs be ſpoken in a direct oppoſition to his *having born our ſins*, and appearing then with all our ſins laid

laid to his charge. He appeared charged with them then, but now he shall *appeare* as apparently and as manifestly to be without those sins, (for of our sins it must needs be meant) and so to be discharged of them as fully, as ever he appeared charged with them: For it is said, *He shall* [*appeare*] *without sin*; and therefore to the judgements of all it shall be made manifest, that *that* God that once charged him with them, hath now fully discharged him of them. The Apostle speaks of it as of a great alteration made in this respect between Christ as he was whilest on earth, and Christ as he is to appeare the second time, and is now in heaven. And this alteration or discharge must necessarily be made by God; for he is the Creditour who followed the Suit, and therefore he alone can give the Acquitance. Sect. 3.

Now secondly, from hence it will follow, that there must be some *time* when this alteration was first made, and discharge given; when Christ from being sin as he was made, should become without *sinne*, through Gods acquiting of him; and this, say I, was at his *Resurrection*. It is not deferred as

2. There must be some season of *time* when this discharge from our sins was first made unto Christ.

Sect. 3. as then to be first done, when he is to appeare the second time, though then it *appears* indeed, but is is really done before; for he comes then to judge others for sinne. Now in reason, when should this Acquitance or Justification from our sinnes bee first given to Christ, and legally pronounced on him, but when he had paid the last farthing of the debt, and made his satisfaction compleat? which was then done, when he began to rise: for his lying in the Grave was a part of his Humiliation, and so of his Satisfaction, as generally Orthodox Divines hold. Now therefore when he began to rise, then ended his Humiliation; and that was the first moment of his Exaltation. His Acquitance therefore bears Date from thence, even from that very houre.

3. That this must needs be, and was first made to him at his *Resurrection.*

Hence thirdly, we read, as that Christ was *condemned*, so that he was *justified.* Thus 1 *Tim.* 3.16. God is said to be *manifest in the flesh*, and then that God being thus made man, is said to have been *justified in the spirit*: That is, whereas God was manifest or appeared *in flesh to condemne sinne in the flesh*, as Rom. 8. that same God-

God-man was also *justified in the spirit* from all those sinnes, and so *received up to glory*, as it followes there. And not to goe far, the very words of this my Text, [*It is God that justifies*] are taken out of *Esay* 50. 8, 9. and as there, they are first spoken by Christ of himselfe, then, when he gave *his back to the smiters, in his death*, (as in the verses before) and was put to death as a *condemned* man, he comforts himselfe with this, [*He is neere that justifies me, who shall condemne?*] And when was that done, or to be done, but at his Resurrection? So the phrase in *Timothy* imports, if you compare it with another in *Peter*, 1 *Pet.* 3. 18. *Being put to death in the flesh*, [*and quickned in* (or by) *the spirit.*] *Paul*, he sayes, [*Justified in the spirit;*] *Peter*, he sayes, [*Quickned in the spirit;*] both meane one and the same thing. By [*Spirit*] is meant the *power* of his *Godhead*, & *Divine nature*, whereby he was at once both raised from the grave, & from under the gilt of sin together. He was at once both *quickned* (or raised) and *justified* also. And that by [*Spirit*] they meane his *Divine nature*, the opposition in both Sect. 3.

Sect. 3. both places evidently implyes; for it is oppoſed to his [*Fleſh*] or humane nature. Now becauſe he was quickned (*or raiſed*) by the power of the God-head, and at that raiſing him, he was *juſtified* alſo by God, and declared juſtified by that Reſurrection, (as he had been declared condemned by his death) Hence, to [*be juſtified*] is put for his *Reſurrection*; for that was his juſtification, or declaration to all the world, that he was juſtified from all the ſinnes laid to his charge. And that other place I cited out of *Iſaiah*, hath the ſame meaning alſo; for Chriſt there comforts himſelfe againſt the Jews condemning him, and putting him to death, with the hopes of Gods juſtifying of him, when he ſhould have gone through that work. And Chriſts meaning there is this, *God will raiſe me up, and acquit me,* though you condemne and kill me. In the other Prophets you ſhall finde Chriſt ſtill comforting himſelfe againſt his condemnation at his death, with the thoughts of his *Reſurrection* which he fore-ſaw as ſhortly to follow after it; as here in *Eſay* he comforts himſelfe with theſe hopes of his *being*

juſtified

justified after their condemnation of him. For instance, *Psal.* 16. 9. *My flesh shall rest in hope, thou wilt not leave my soule in hell, nor suffer thy holy One to see corruption.* Which words (you know) *Peter* in the *Acts* doth twice interpret of Christs Resurrection. In like manner here in *Esay*, against his death and condemnation he comforts himselfe with the hopes of Gods justification of him at his Resurrection, *He is neere who justifies me (and he shall helpe me) who shall condemne?* Sect. 3.

His Resurrection therefore called his *first begetting.*

And further, to confirme and strengthen this notion, because his Resurrection was the first moment of this his justification from our sins, therefore it is, that God calls it his first begetting of Christ, [*This day have I begotten thee*] speaking manifestly of his Resurrection, *Acts* 13.35. And the reason of his so calling it, is, because all the while before he was covered with sinne, and the *likenesse of sinfull flesh*; But now having flung it off, he appeares like Gods Son indeed, (as if newly begotten.) And thus also there commeth to be the fuller conformity between Christs justification and ours: For as our justification is

And therein a conformity between our Regeneration, and his Resurrection

at

Sect. 3. have been done *to us*, yea *by us*, *in him*, and *with him*. Yea, whatever God meant to doe for us, and in us, what ever privilledge or benefit he meant to bestow upon us, he did that thing first to Christ, and (some way) bestowed the like on him as a Common person, that so it might be by a solemne formall Act ratified, and be made sure to be done to us in our persons in due time, having first been done to him representing our persons; and that by this course taken, it might (when done to us) bee effected by virtue of what was first done to him.

Thus in sanctification Christ first sanctified, then we in him.

Thus God meaning to *sanctifie* us, he sanctifies Christ first, in him as a common person sanctifying us all: *For their sakes I sanctifie my selfe, that they also may be sanctified through thy truth*, *John* 17.19. He sanctifies the humane nature of Christ personall, that he may sanctifie Christ mysticall, (that is, his body) and him *first*, as a Commō person representing us, that so we being virtually, and representatively sanctified in him, may be sure to be sanctified afterwards in our own persōs, by means of his sanctificatiō. And so

so in like manner for our sakes he was *just fied in the Spirit*; because we were to be justified, and so to be justified first in him, and with him as a Common person. Now this rule holds in all blessings else bestowed; for *Paul* pronounceth of them all, that *God hath blessed us with all spirituall blessings in Christ Jesus*, *Ephes.* 1. 3. which God did to order, (that as he speaks of ordayning salvation to be by faith, *Rom.* 4. 16.) that all those *blessings might be sure to all the seed*. For this formall investiture of estating us into all blessings by such solemne acts done to Christ as our Head and Representer of us, makes what he intends to bestow, sure before-hand, by an irrepealable act and sentence, which hath its warrant in all Lawes of men, as I have shewne, and shall anon againe urge.

Sect. 3.

So in all blessings else.

And secondly, by the equity of the same Law that in *Adam* we were all *condemned*, (*Adam* being a Type of him in this) by the same Law (I say) we were all *just fied* in Christ when he was justified, else the Type were not therein fulfilled. Now the sentence of condemnation was first passed

2. Proved by the equity of that Law, that in *Adams* condemnation we were all condemned.

Sect. 3. ſed upon *Adam* alone, yet conſidered as a Common perſon for us; therefore alſo this Acquitance and Juſtification was then paſſed towards Chriſt alone, as a publique perſon for us. Yea, in this his being juſtified, Chriſt muſt much rather be conſidered as a Common perſon repreſenting us, then *Adam* was, in his condemnation: For Chriſt in his own perſon, as he had no ſinne, ſo he had no need of any juſtification from ſinne, nor ſhould ever have been condemned: And therefore this muſt be onely in a reſpect unto our ſinnes imputed to him; and if ſo, then in our ſtead. And ſo herein, he was more purely to be conſidered as a Common perſon for us, then ever *Adam* was, in his being condemned. For *Adam*, beſides his ſtanding as a Common perſon for us, was further more condemned in his own perſon; but Chriſt in being juſtified from ſinne, could onely be conſidered as ſtanding for others. Thus *Rom.* 5. 18. *Therefore as by the offence of one, judgement came upon all men to condemnation*; *even* [*ſo*] (or, in like manner) *by the righteouſneſſe of that one* (*man Chriſt*) *the free gift came upon all men*

Chriſt much rather a Common perſon in his being juſtified, then *Adam* was in his condemnation.

men (namely in Christ) *unto justification of life.* He parallels both with a [*So,*] only with this difference between *Adams* being a Common person for us, (and so between the ground of our being condemned in him) and Christ his being a Common person for us, (and our Acquitance in him) that the *condemnation came upon all* by a necessary, naturall covenant, (for by such a covenant was *Adam* appointed a Common person for us) but Christ his being appointed thus a Common person for us, it was by a *free gift* of grace; and therefore in like manner by a free gift of grace it is that the imputation of that which he did, or was done to him, is reckoned ours. As then in *Adam all dyed,* when he sinned (as the Apostle speaks) so in Christ were *all justified,* when he was justified. For as in his death Christ was a publique person for us, and in all that befell him; so in his Resurrection, & in all that was then done to him; and so, in this his being then justifyed. And as when he dyed, the *Just was put to death* for *the unjust,* (as *Peter* speakes) so when he rose and was justifyed, the Just that needed no Sect. 3.

Sect. 3. juſtification was juſtifyed for the unjuſt, who elſe had been condemned; and ſo we were then juſtifyed with him.

Chap. VI.

How our faith may raiſe from hence juſt matter of Triumph *about our* Juſtification. *An explication how we are* juſtified *by faith, although* juſtified *in Chriſt at his* Reſurrection.

And hereupon is grounded this Triumph of Faith here, from Chriſts Reſurrection, *Who ſhall condemne? It is Chriſt that is riſen:* The meaning whereof is, that was juſtifyed at his Reſurrection, ([*Juſtifyed in the Spirit*] and [*Quickned in the Spirit*] being all one) and *we in him:* Yea, and a [*rather*] is put upon this, rather then upon his death; for this act was a ſolemne diſcharge from all ſin and condemnation; it was a legall Acquitance given to Chriſt for all our ſinnes, and ſo to us alſo conſidered as in

in him. His Death was but the satisfaction and payment; but this is the first Act of Absolution: Yea, and this is the Originall Act, which is upon Record between God and Christ; and our Justification and Atonement (when we are justifyed by faith in Christ) is but a Copy fetcht from this Roll, and Court sentence then pronounced. Sect. 3.

And such a way and course to ratifie and make Acts good and legall, (even to have them done by another representing ones person) is common among men, (as those instances I formerly gave doe shew.) An Attorney at Law receives a debt, or an Acquitance for a debt, paid or given for another man, and it is as legall, as if the man himselfe, or Creditour had done it, and the Debtour had received the Acquitance himselfe. Yea, Acts of the greatest and highest concernment are oft-times no otherwise transacted; as the mariages of Princes are by Proxy solemnized, their Embassadours representing their persons, and contracting and marrying their wives in their stead, which acts are thereby made as irrevocable, and irrepealable,

Sect. 3. as if themſelves had in perſon done them. And ſo if we were juſtified when Chriſt did riſe and was juſtified, our juſtification then cannot be reverſed, but ſtands as legall and warrantable as any act that God or man ever ratified or confirmed. And *who then ſhall condemn?*

Caution. Onely, for farther explication ſake, (leſt there be a miſtake) let me adde this, That it is neceſſary that we be *juſtified* in our own perſons *by faith*, (notwithſtanding this former act thus legally paſſed) whereby we lay hold upon what God did thus before for us in Chriſt, to the end that God upon our believing may according to his own rules *juſtifie* his juſtifying of us unto all the world; which untill we doe believe, he could not doe: For according to the revealed Rules of his Word, (which he profeſſeth to proceed by at the latter day) there is a curſe and a ſentence of condemnation pronounced againſt us, under which we ſtand till he ſhall take it off, by giving us faith; upon which believing he hath, in the ſame Word made the promiſe of juſtifying us in our own perſons, as

as before he had done in Christ. Yet still notwithstanding, so, as, although when we first believe, then only Justification *is actually* and personally applyed to us; yet at Christs Resurrection, and in his being then justified, this act and sentence was *virtually* pronounced upon us; and so doth necessarily require, and exact at Gods hands, the bestowing faith upon us; that so by vertue of this former act passed, we come to be actually justified in our own consciences, and before all the world: And so our Justification which was but secretly wrought, and passed upon us in Christ, is never made void, but stands irrepealable; and so ratified, that our personall justification by faith doth alwayes infallibly second and succeed it. And (to illustrate it a little) our condemnation in *Adam*, and this our justification in Christ, doe in this hold parallel together, That as in *Adam* we were all virtually condemned, (*In Adam all dye*) (and that legally enough too, for thereupon came out that Statute-Law, *Statutum est*, *It is appointed* that all should dye) and yet we are not actually in our Sect. 3.

Sect. 3. own perſons condemned, till we are born of him; nor doe we perſonally dye, untill we lay down our fleſh: Even ſo is it in the matter of our Juſtification; it was done virtually in Chriſt, and afterwards when we believe, is actually paſſed in and upon our ſelves. Now I call this former but a *virtuall Juſtification*, even as by the ſentence of condemnation paſſed upon a Malefactor, he is called a *dead man*, that is, he is ſo virtually and *in Law*, (as we ſay) though naturally he dye not many dayes after, but in that reſpect may be ſtill alive: ſo by Chriſts being juſtified, we are all virtually, and in Law juſtified, through a ſecret, yet irrepealable Covenant between God and Chriſt, who onely did then *know who were his.*

And for a confirmation even of this alſo, That God accounts all the Elect juſtified in his juſtifying of Chriſt, we ſhall not need to goe any farther then the words of this Text, if we doe but diligently compare their ſtanding here, with that of theirs in that place out of which they are taken, and where we finde them firſt recorded and ſpoken, namely, in that

50. of *Esay*, 7, 8. *He is neere that justifies me, who is he that shall condemne?* Now there (as Interpreters agree, and as the Context shews) those words are spoken by Christ himselfe: for *ver.* 5. he speaks of Gods *boring his eare* to doe his will, (the same expression that is used of Christ, *Psal.* 40. 6.) and farther sayes, *I gave my back to the smiters, and my cheekes to them that pulled off the haire, and I hid not my face from shame and spitting*: (all which you may read in Christs sufferings, *Mat.* 26. 27. and 27. 26.) And he spake before (in *ver.* 4.) of *Gods having given him the tongue of the learned, to speake a word in season to him that is weary*: (which you may read done by Christ, *Mat.* 11. 28.) Now those words were spoken by Christ, to comfort himselfe against the Jews condemning him as considering that God would justifie him; as at his Resurrection (you have heard) he did. Now mark it, those very words which *Isaiah* brings in Christ speaking as of himself alone, (those very words) *Paul* here boldly applyes (in the like triumph) to all the Elect of Christ, *Who shall condemne? It is God that justifies*; and this, be- Sect. 3.

Sect. 3. cauſe Chriſt is *dead* and *riſen*, and acquited by God. Chriſt ſpake thoſe words as a publike perſon, in the name of all his Elect, whom he in his death, and in his juſtification repreſented; and for that very reſpect *Paul* ſpeaks the like words over again, of all Elect Beleevers, as being as truly and really intended of them, when ſpoken by Chriſt, as of himſelfe, and his own perſon. *He is neer that juſtifies me,* (ſayes Chriſt) *who ſhall condemne?* (namely) Me, or mine Elect, whoſe perſons I ſuſtaine. And *Who ſhall lay any thing to the charge of Gods Elect?* (ſayes *Paul*) *It is God that juſtifies, who ſhall condemne?* for Chriſt hath dyed, and been condemned for them, and Chriſt was juſtifyed from that condemnation, and they in him. And becauſe the juſtification of himſelfe, which Chriſt ſpake of, as lookt for from God, was to be made at his Reſurrection, (as hath been ſaid) therefore *Paul* here puts a [*rather*] upon his Reſurrection.

And farther to eſtabliſh this, as you heard before out of *Rom.* 6. 10. that in reſpect of Sanctification we were *dead with Chriſt*, even then when he dyed;

dyed; so in the 2. of *Coloss.* 13. we are said to be *risen with him*, in respect of our justification, (which is the thing in hand.) The words are, *And you being dead in your sinnes*, (namely, the guilt of your sins) *and the uncircumcision of your flesh*, (that is, in respect of the power of corrupt nature) *hath he quickned together with him*, [*having forgiven you all your trespasses.*] See here, the forgivenesse of our sinnes, or our justification, is called a *quickning*, or a *raising up of us*, (as the 12. *ver.* hath it) *together with him*, in a conformity and relation to that justification from our sins, which at his *Resurrection* he received in our names. His meaning is, he was justifyed then, and in our names; and so we are now justifyed through the vertue of that our Communion with him therein: For if you marke the connexion of of the words with what follows, *ver.* 14. you will finde this *forgiving of their trespasses* (*ver.* 13.) *through their being quickned together with him*, not only to have been done when they believed, and so when they had that justification personally first applyed to them, of which it is true, the words Sect. 3.

Sect. 3. in the 12. *ver.* are to be underſtood) but alſo *then* to have been done, *when he having* (as it follows in the 14. *ver.*) *blotted out the hand-writing of Ordinances* which was againſt us, *nayling it to his Croſſe*, and *having ſpoyled Principalities and Powers*, and got the victory, (namely, in his riſing againe) had *made a ſhew of them openly*, (in his aſcending to heaven) *triumphing over them* [ἐν αὐτῷ] *in himſelfe*, (as the Margent hath it) (of which words I ſhall farther ſpeak in the next Head) So as *then when Chriſt* did this in himſelfe, then were our ſins forgiven; then were we acquited with him, and triumphed with him; he doing all this in our ſtead, repreſenting us.

CHAP.

Chap. VII.

How all this, both the support of our Faith, *and our* Justification *by* Christ's Resurrection, *is sealed up to us in Baptisme. The* Conclusion. *How* Faith *may make use of Christ's Resurrection in its pleas to* God.

And all this our communion wth Christ in his Resurrection, both in respect of Sanctification (which the 6. of the *Rom.* holds forth) and of Justification, (which this place in the *Coloss.* holds forth) is lively (as both places declare) set out, and sealed up to us, in the Sacrament of Baptisme. *Rom.* 6. 3, 4. we are said to be *buried with him in Baptisme, &c.* and *Col.* 2. 12. *Buried with him in Baptisme, wherein also you are risen with him.* The eminent thing signified and represented in Baptisme, is not simply the blood of Christ as it washeth us from sin; but there is a farther representation therein of Christs Death, Burial, and Resurrection, in the Baptized's being first buried under water, and

Sect. 3. and then riſing out of it; and this not in a bare *conformity* unto Chriſt, but in a repreſentation of *a communion with Chriſt*, in that his Death and Reſurrection: Therfore it is ſaid, [*We are buried with him in Baptiſme:*] and, [*Wherein you are riſen with him:*] It is not ſimply ſaid, *like as* he was buried and roſe; but [*With him.*] So as our communion and *one-neſſe with him* in his Reſurrection, is repreſented to us therein, and not onely our conformity or likeneſſe unto him therein. And ſo Baptiſme repreſenteth this to us, that Chriſt having once in himſelfe ſuſtained the perſons of all the Elect in his Buriall and Reſurrection, that now upon the party himſelfe who is baptized, is perſonally, particularly, and apparently *re-acted* the ſame Part againe, in his Baptiſme; thereby ſhewing what his communion with Chriſt before was, in what was then done to Chriſt; that he then was buried with Chriſt, and roſe with him: and upon that ground, is now in this outward ſigne of Baptiſme, (as in a ſhew or repreſentation) both buried, and alſo riſeth againe.

And

And moreover, hence it is, that the *Answer of a good conscience*, (which is made the inward effect of this Ordinance of Baptisme, 1 *Pet.*3.21.) is there also attributed uuto Christs *Resurrection*, as the thing signified and represented in Baptisme, and as the *cause* of that answer of a good conscience: *Even Baptisme* (saith he) *doth now also save us* (as being the Ordinance that seales up salvation) *not the putting away of the filth of the flesh*, or the washing of the outward man; but *the answer of a good conscience towards God*, [*By the Resurrection of Jesus Christ.*] To open these words: Our consciences are that principle in us, which are the seat of the guilt of all the sinnes of the whole man; unto whose Court they all come to accuse us, as unto Gods Deputy: which Conscience is called Good or Evill, as the state of the man is. If his sinne remain unpardoned, then as his estate is damnable, so his conscience is evill: If his sinnes be forgiven, and his person justified, his conscience is said to be good: Conscience having its denomination from the mans state, even as the Urine is called good or bad, Sect. 3.

Sect. 3. bad, as the ſtate of the mans body is healthfull or unſound, whoſe Urine it is. Now in Baptiſme, forgiveneſſe of ſinnes, and juſtification, being ſealed up to a believers faith and conſcience, under that lively repreſentation of his Communion with Chriſt in his Reſurrection: hence this is made the fruit of Baptiſme, that the good conſcience of a believer ſealed up in Baptiſme, hath wherewithall from thence to anſwer all the accuſations of ſinne, that can, or doe at any time come in upon him; and all this as it is there added, [*By vertue of the Reſurrection of Jeſus Chriſt:*] namely, in this reſpect, that his Communion with Chriſt in his Reſurrection, hath been repreſented in his Baptiſme as a ground of his faith, and of that *anſwer* unto all accuſations. So that indeed, the ſame thing that *Paul* ſayes by way of triumph and defiance to all accuſations, *Who ſhall condemne?* [*Chriſt is riſen*] the very ſame thing *Peter* here mentions, though not by way of Defiance, yet of a Beleevers Anſwer and Apologie, That if ſinnes doe come to condemne or accuſe, a good conſcience is ready to ſay, *Chriſt*

is

is risen, and I was then *justified in him*; There is my Answer, which nothing in heaven or hell is able to reply unto. *This is the answer of a good conscience, by the Resrrection of Jesus Christ.* Sect. 3.

Now to crown this second Pillar of Faith with this *Coronis* or Conclusion, by way of application or Direction to a believers faith, How to make use of Christs Resurrection in point of non-condemnation. You heard before, out of *Rom. 6.* that in respect of Mortification (as the Apostle there reasoneth) we may be truly said to have been *perfectly dead* to all *sinne* in Christs *dying unto sinne once*: and through his representing us therein as dying unto *sinne*, *in* and *with him*. So as although we be for the present but imperfectly mortified in our selves, yet when corruptions arise, the Apostle bids us help our selves against them by faith, [*reasoning*] our selves to stand wholly dead to sinne, when Christ dyed; and so to conclude from thence, that we shall one day be fully dead to sinne, because we then d'd perfe8ly dye in Christ unto it: which kinde of *reasoning* also God would have us use as a motive

Application.

How faith is to make use of this in pleading our *Justification.*

Sect. 3. motive (and of all motives that are in the Goſpell it is the ſtrongeſt) againſt any corruption when as it ariſeth; *Shall I that am dead to ſinne in Chriſt,* (and ſo am freed from it) *ſhall I live any longer therein? Ver.* 2. Now as God would have our faith make this uſe of our Communiou with Chriſt in his death, in point of *ſanctification*; juſt ſo, when guilt of ſinne ariſeth in thy conſcience to accuſe or threaten condemnation, [*reaſon*] thou thy ſelfe (as the Apoſtles word is in that other caſe) or *reckon thy ſelfe* (as our tranſlation hath it) *juſtified* in Chriſt, in his Juſtification, which was done at his Reſurrection. Yea, and ſeeing God would have thee uſe thy Communion with Chriſt in his Death, as an argument to move thee to mortifie ſinne, (bidding thee to reckon thy ſelfe dead to ſin in Chriſt) doe thou deſire him in like manner, to *reckon thee as juſtified* at Chriſts Reſurrection (for the ground of both is the ſame) and returne that as an argument to him, to move him *to juſtifie thee.* And this is that anſwer of a good conſcience which *Peter* ſpeakes of; this is the meaning of *Pauls* chal-

lenge,

lenge, *Who shall condemne? Christ is risen.* Sect. 3.

And should thy heart object, and say, But I know not whether I was one of those that God reckoned justified with Christ when he arose: Then goe thou to God, and aske him boldly, whether he did not doe this for thee, and whether thou wert not one of them intended by him? Put God to it, and God will (by vertue of Christs *Resurrection* for thee) even himselfe [*Answer*] thy faith this question, ere thou art aware; He will not deny it: And to secure thee the more, know, that however Christ will be sure to look to that, for thee; so as that thou having been then intended, (as if thy heart be drawne to give it selfe up to Christ, thou wert) shalt never be condemned.

SECT.

SECT. IV.

FAITH ſupported by Chriſts ASCENSION, AND SITting at Gods right hand.

ROM. 8. 34.
Who is he that condemneth? It is Chriſt, [*who is even at the right hand of God.*]

CHAP. I.

A Connexion of this third Head with the two former: Shewing how it affords a farther degree of Triumph. *Two things involved in it:* 1. Chriſts Aſcenſion: 2. Chriſts power and authority in heaven.

I Come next to this third great Pillar and ſupport of Faith, *Chriſts* Being *at Gods right hand*: and to ſhew how the view and conſideration hereof may

may strengthen faith seeking justifi- Sect. 4.
cation, and pardon of sinne: *Who is he that condemneth? Christ is even at Gods right hand.*

In the opening of which, I shall keep to the begun method, both by shewing how *Justification* it selfe *depends* upon this, and the *evidence* thereof to us: both which the Apostle had here in his eye, and from both which our faith may derive comfort and assurance. And I meane to keepe punctually to the matter of *Justification* onely, as in the former.

These two latter that remain here in the Text, (*Christs sitting at Gods right hand*, and his *interceding for us*) are brought in here by the Apostle, as those which have a *redundant force* and prevalencie in them, for the *non-condemnation* of the Elect: that although the two former abundantly served to secure it, yet these two added to the former, doe make the triumph of faith more compleat and full, and us *more then Conquerors*, as it after follows. Nor doth this place alone make mention of Christs *sitting at Gods right hand* (which I now am first to handle) in *this* its *relation*, and

in-

Sect. 4. *influence* into our *Justification*, and the assurance of faith about it: but you have it to the same end, use, and purpose, alleadged by that other great Apostle, 1. *Pet.* 3. from the 18. to the 22. And if the scopes of these two Apostles in both places be compared, they are the same. *Here* the *Resurrection* of Christ, and his *sitting at Gods right hand* are brought in as the ground of this bold *challenge* and *triumph* of faith: and there, in *Peter*, is mentioned the *Answer or Plea of a good conscience*, in a beleever justified, which it puts into the Court, and opposeth against all condemning guilts: (so it is called, *ver.* 21.) The Apostle alleadging *the Resurrection of Jesus Christ* as one ground of it, (*the answer of a good conscience by the Resurrection of Jesus* (*Christ*:) And then further to back and strengthen this *Plea* or *Answer* of a good conscience, the Apostle puts *his Ascension and sitting at Gods right hand* into the Bill, as further grounds confirming it, so it follows, [*who is gone into Heaven, and is at the right hand of God; Angells, and Authorities, and Powers, being made subject to him*:] *All which* the Apostle

stle *here* expresseth in *one word* (as enough to carry it) that *Christ is even at Gods right hand.* The soule hath a sufficient *answer* against condemnation, in *Christs death* and *Resurrection*, full enough, though it should stop there; yea, therein can faith *triumph*, though it went no further: for it can shew a full satisfaction given in his death, and that accepted by God for us; and Christ acquited, and we in him: Therefore faith (you see) comes to a [*rather*] there. But then, let it goe on, to consider Jesus *sitting at Gods right hand*, and making *intercession* for us; and then faith will triumph and insult over all accusers, be more then a Conqueror; then it comes not to a *rather* onely, (as here) but to a [*much more*] *shall we be saved by his life*; thus *Rom.* 5. 10. And the meaning thereof is, that if his *death* had power to pay all our debts, and justifie us at first, then much more hath his *life* this power: So that his death is but the ground and foundation of our faith herein, and the lowest step of this ladder; but these other are the top and full triumph of faith therein. And our spirits should rise, Sect. 4.

as

Sect. 4. as the Apoſtle here riſeth: Faith upon theſe wings may not onely fly above the Gun-ſhot of all accuſations, and condemners; but even cleane out of their ſight, and ſo far above all ſuch thoughts and feares, as it may reach to a ſecurity *that ſinnes are forgotten, and ſhall be remembred no more.* What *joy* was there in the Diſciples, when they *ſaw Chriſt riſen? Joh.* 20. Therefore in the *Primitive times*, it was uſed as a voice of joy: and to this day the Grecian Chriſtians ſo entertaine each other, at that time of the yeare, with theſe words, *The Lord is riſen*: your *Surety* is *out* of *Priſon*; feare not. But (as Chriſt ſaid in another caſe, ſo ſay I) what will you ſay, if you ſee your *Surety aſcended up to Heaven*, and that, *as far above Angels and Principalities* (as the Apoſtle ſpeakes, *Eph.* 1.) *as the Heavens are above the Earth?* will you not in your faiths and hopes proportionably aſcend, and climb up alſo; and have thoughts of pardon, as far exceeding your ordinary thoughts, as the *heavens are above the earth?* Therefore *firſt view* him as *aſcending into Heaven*, ere ever he comes to be at *Gods right hand,*

hand, and see what matter of triumph that will afford you; for that you must first suppose, ere you can see him at Gods right hand; and so is necessarily included, though not expressed here: But that place fore-quoted out of *Peter* (1 *Pet.* 3.) gives us both these two particulars included in it: 1. His *Ascension*, [*Who is gone into heaven*;] And 2. his *power and authority there*, [*Is at Gods right hand, and hath all power and authority subject to him*;] and prompts both these, as fit matter to be put into a *good conscience* its *Answer* and *Apologie* why it should not be condemned: and therefore both may *here* as well come in *into faiths triumph*; and that as being intended also by the Apostle, and included in this one expression. He speaks with the least, to shew what cause faith had to triumph for the least expression of it: his purpose being but to give a hint to faith, of that which comprehensively containes many things in it, which he would have us distinctly to consider for our comfort. Sect. 4.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Shewing first, what evidence *for our justification, Christs* Ascension *into Heaven affords unto our* Faith, *upon that* first *fore-mentioned consideration of his being a* Surety *for us.*

FIrst then to see what triumph his ascending into Heaven will adde unto our faith in matter of non-condemnation.

1. By considering what was the last action he did when he was to Ascend: *Blessing* his Disciples.

And herein, first there is not nothing in it to consider, *what he then did*, and what was his *last Act* when he was to take his rise, to fly up to Heaven. He *blessed his Disciples*, and therebyleft a blessing upon earth with them, for *all his elect*, to the end of the World: The true reason and minde of which blessing them, was, that he being now to goe to execute the eternall office of his Priest-hood in Heaven, (of which God had sworn, *Thou art a Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec,*) As *Melchisedec* in the Type, *blessed Abraham*, and in him *all the faithfull* as *in his loins*, (there-

(therefore the Apostle said that *Levi paid tithes unto Melchisedec in Abrahams loines*, therefore he was blessed in his loines) so did Christ begin this *new and second part* of *his Priesthood*, with *blessing* the Apostles, and in them all the elect, to the end of the World. This was the *last* thing that Christ did *on earth*, yea this he did whilst ascending; *he was taken up whilst he did it*: So *Luke* 24. 50, 51. And thus solemnly he now did this, to shew that the curse was gone, and that sinne was gone; and that action speakes thus much, as if Christ himselfe had said it; *O my brethren* (for so he styled his Disciples, after his *Resurrection*) I have been *dead*, and in dying made a *curse* for you: now that *curse* I have fully *removed*, and my Father hath acquited me, and you, for it: and now I can b◆hold to *blesse* you, and pronounce all your *sinnes forgiven*, and your persons justified. For that is the intendment and foundation of *blessing* [*Blessed is the man whose sins are forgiven him*] and therefore that was the true meaning of his blessing them: which he reserved thus as his last Act, to shew, how by his death he had redeemed

Sect. 4.

To shew the curse was removed, and their sinnes pardoned.

Sect. 4. deemed them from the curse of the Law, and now going to *Heaven*, was able to *blesse* them with *all the spirituall blessings* that are *there*, and which Heaven can afford; for *Heavenly* they are called in that respect. *Ephes.* 1 4. And as in *Abraham* (blessed by *Melchisedec*) all the faithfull were blessed; so, in these Apostles, all the elect to come are blessed. As when *God* individually *blessed Adam* and *Eve*, at the first Creation; yet he, *in them*, *blessed all* that were for ever to come of them: so Christ in blessing them, blessed us, and all *that shall beleeve*, *through their word*, to the end of the World. And that they were thus then to be considered, as common persons, receiving this *blessing* for us all; appeareth by Christs words then uttered, [*I am with you to the end of the World*] (i. e. with you, and all your successors, both Ministers, and other believers) *Mat.* 28 *ult.* And Christ herein did, as God did before him: When *God had done his work* of creation, *He looked upon all he had done, and saw that it was good, and he blessed it*: Thus did Jesus Christ; now that *he had by that one offering, perfected for ever all the elect*, he

And in blessing his Apostles thus, he blessed all that should believe in him.

he comfortably vieweth, and *pronounceth* it *perfect*, and them blessed; and so goes to *Heaven*, to *keep* and *enjoy* the *Sabbath* of all there. Sect. 4.

Now Secondly, let us *see him Ascending*; and see what comfort that will also afford our faith, towards the perswasion of *Justification*. The Apostles stood *gazing* on him; and so doe you lift up your hearts to gaze on him by faith; and view him in *that act*, as he is passing along into Heaven, as *leading sinne, hell, death, and devill in triumph*, at his Chariot wheels. And therewith let your faith *triumph*, in a further *evidence* of *justification*. Thus *Ephesians* 4. 8. cut of the 68. *Psalme*, *ver.* 18. the Apostle saith, *When he ascended up on high* [*he led captivity captive:*] (to which Hebraisme the Latine phrase [*vincere victoriam*] to win a victory, doth answer) then *He led* captive all our *spirituall enemies* that would have captived us, they being now captived. Now *leading of captives* is alwaies after a perfect *victory*. And therefore, whereas at his *Death* he had *conquered* them, at his *Rising*, *scattered* them, now at his *Ascension* he *leads them captive*: And so

A second support from the very Act of Ascending.

How it was an act of Triumph over death, hell, sinne, &c.

Sect. 4. that *Psal.* in the Type, begins, *ver.* 1. *Let God* [*arise*] *and let his enemies* [*be scattered;*] *let them flee before him*: so at his *Resurrection* they did: And then he ascends in triumph (as here) in token of *victory*, [he is ascended up on high, *ver.* 18.] he ascends as *David* after his victory, up to Mount *Sion* (for the celebrating of which, that *Psal* seemes to have been made by *David:*) this was the intended Type of Christs triumph at his Ascension.

Two Acts of Triumph in it. And two [*Actus triumphales*] *triumphing Acts* there were, here mentioned; 1. *Leading the captives* bound to his Chariot wheeles; as the manner of the Roman triumphs was, when the Conqueror went up to the Capitol; and other Heathens in *Davids* time; as *Achilles* led *Hector* captive, who tyed his feete to his Chariot-wheeles, and dragged him dead round about the walls of *Troy*: Now thus did Christ then deal with our sinnes, and all other enemies. The *Second act is casting abroad of gifts*, [*He gave gifts to men.*] It was the *custome* at their triumphs to *cast new Coins* (*missilia*) abroad among the multitude; so doth *Christ* throw the greatest *gifts* for

for the good of men, that ever were given. Therefore, *who shall condemne?* *sins* and *devils* are not only dead, but *triumphed over.* Compare with this, that other place, *Colos.* 2. 15. *Having spoyled Principalities and powers, hee made a shew of them openly* [*triumphing*] *over them* [*in himselfe.*] So I reade it, and the Greeke beares it, and so it is in the margent varied: it is a manifest allusion unto the manner of *Triumphs* after victories among the *Romans*; even unto *two* of the most notable *parts* thereof; the first of spoyling the enemy upon the *place*, ere they stirred out of the field: and this was done by Christ on the Crosse, [*Having spoyled them first*] as ver. 14. hath it. He speaks it of the devills our enemies and accusers; they had all Gods threatnings in his Law, and the *Ceremoniall Law* (the *Bond* for our debt unto the *Morall Law*) to shew for it; in these lay the *power of the Devill* over us, that hee could boldly come to God and accuse us, and sue our bond; And therfore *Heb.* 2. 14. hee is said to have *the power of Death.* Now Christ first tooke away all his power, and spoyled him of all his en- Sect. 4.

Sect. 4. ſignes, weapons, and colours which he did on the place where the battaile was fought, namely, *on the Croſſe*; and *nailed our bond* thereto, and having paid the debt, left the bond canceld, ere he ſtirred off the Croſſe. But then having thus ſpoiled theſe enemies on the Croſſe, he further makes a *publique triumphall ſhew* of them in his owne perſon, which is a ſecond Act; as the manner of the *Romans* Emperors was, in their great Triumphs, to ride through the City in the greateſt ſtate and have all the ſpoiles carried before them, and the Kings and Nobles whom they had taken, they tyed to their Chariots, and led them as Captives: And this did Chriſt at *his Aſcenſion*; (for of *his triumphing* at his Aſcenſion, I take this *Triumph* in this Epiſtle to the *Coloſ.* to be underſtood; and ſo to be interpreted by that forecited 4. of the *Epheſians*:) He plainly manifeſting by this publique open ſhew of them at his Aſcenſion, that he had ſpoi'ed, and fully ſubdued them on the Croſſe. That which hath diverted Interpreters from thinking this of 2. *Col.* to have been the triumph of his Aſcenſion, hath been this, That the

the tritmph is said to have been made [ἐν αὐτῷ] wch they interpret [*in it*] as if it referred to *the Crosse*, (mentioned *ver.* 14.) as the place of it; when as it may as well be translated [*in himselfe*] i. e [*in his own power and strength*;] noting, how *he alone* did this, which *other Conquerors* doe not; they conquer not *in themselves*, and by themselves, which Christ did. And yet it was the Law, that if the *Roman Emperors* or *Generals* themselves took any thing in War, they had a peculiar honour to dedicate it in triumph more peculiarly: Now *Christ conquered in himselfe*, and therefore *triumphed in himselfe*, and himselfe *alone*. And thus it became our Redeemer (like another *Sampson*) not onely to *break* Sins bars, and fling off *Hell gates*, and come out of that Prison he was in; but as in signe of a *Trophie*, to take them on his *back*, and *carry* them up the hill, (as *Sampson* (the Type of him) did the gates of the City to an high hill) himselfe triumphantly carrying them on his own shoulders. Sect. 4.

Now did *Christ* then, who was your *surety*, thus *triumph?* then let your *faith triumph* likewise; for this was not

Sect. 4. only done by your *Surety*, but in *your ſtead*; ſeeing this [*for us*] here, is to be put to each thing mentioned. The Apoſtle cals for this at our hands here *We are more then Conquerors*, ſayes he, *ver.*37.

A third ſupport to faith from Gods firſt entertainment of Chriſt when he came firſt to Heaven.

Then, thirdly, ſee him *entring into Heaven*; when he comes *firſt* to Court after this great undertaking; how doth God look on him? is God ſatisfied with what hee hath done? As (you know) when a Generall comes home, there uſeth to be great obſerving how the King takes his ſervice, as performed according to Commiſſion; Chriſt as a *Surety undertooke* for ſinners, fully to *Conquer* all our enemies; and God bade him look that he did it *perfectly*, or never ſee his face more: *Heb.*5. Hee was to bee *perfect* through ſufferings, and thoſe ſufferings to bee ſuch *as to perfect us alſo*; *Heb.*10. Now behold your *Surety* is like a *Conqueror entred Heaven*: Let that convince you, that he hath ſatisfied the debt, and performed his commiſſion to a tittle: God would never have ſuffered him to come thither elſe but as ſoone as ever his head had peept into Heaven, have ſent him down

That this is a further evidence that God is ſatiſfied for ſin.

downe againe to performe the rest; Sect. 4.
But God lets him enter in, and hee comes boldly, and confidently, and God lets him stay there: therefore be convinced, that he hath given God full satisfaction. Christ himselfe useth *this argument*, as the strongest that could bee brought to *convince the World*, that his *righteousnesse* (which hee had in his Doctrine taught them) was the *righteousnesse* which men were only to be *saved by*, *the* true *Righteousnesse of God* indeede. *John* 16.9.10. *He shall convince the world of righteousnesse*: that is, worke faith in the hearts of men, to beleeve and lay hold on my Righteousnesse, as the true Righteousnesse that God hath ordayned: and this *because* (saves he) *I go to my Father*, and *you shal see me no more*: That is, by this *argument* and *evidence* it is, and shall be evinced, that I who undertooke to satisfie for sinne, and to procure a perfect Righteousnesse, have perfectly performed it: and that it is a *righteousnesse* which Gods justice doth accept of, to save sinners by; In that I after my death, and finishing this worke, will *ascend* up to my Father, into *Heaven*, and keep my *stan-*

Sect. 4. *ding there*, and *you ſhall ſee me no more*: Whereas, if I had not fulfilled all righteouſneſſe, and perfectly ſatisfied God, you may be ſure there would be no going into Heaven for me, nor remaining there: God would ſend me down again to doe the reſt, and you ſhould certainly *ſee me* with ſhame *ſent back again*; but I *goe to Heaven, and you ſhall ſee me no more.*

CHAP. III.

Shewing what evidence *alſo Chriſts* ſitting at Gods right hand, *having been* our Surety, *affords to our faith for* Juſtification.

NOw then in the next place, for his *being*, or *ſitting at Gods right hand*, which is the ſecond particular to be ſpoken of. As ſoon as Chriſt was caried into Heaven, look, as all *the Angells fell* downe and *worſhipped* him; ſo his Father welcommed him, with the higheſt grace that ever yet was ſhewne; The words which he then ſpake, we have recorded, *Pſal.* 110. *Sit thou at my right hand, till I make thine*

thine enemies thy foot-stoole. You may by the way obſerve, for the illuſtration of this, How upon all the ſeverall parts of performance of his office, either God is brought in ſpeaking to Chriſt, or Chriſt to his Father. Thus when he *choſe* him *firſt* to be our Mediator, he takes an oath, *Thou art a Prieſt for ever after the order of Melchiſedec.* Again, when Chriſt came to take upon him our nature, the *words* he ſpake are recorded, *Loe I am come to doe thy will, a body haſt thou fitted me*: ſo *Heb.* 10. out of the 40. *Pſal.* Likewiſe when he hung upon the Croſſe, his words unto God are recorded, *Pſal.* 22. 1. *My God, my God, why haſt thou forſaken me?* In like manner, when he *roſe againe*, Gods words uſed then to him are recorded, *Thou art my Sonne, this day have I begotten thee*, *Pſal.* 2. (which place is expounded of the *Reſurrection*, *Acts* 13. 33) which is as much as if he had ſaid, Thou never appeareds't like my Sonne till now; for whereas I choſe a Sonne to be glorified with power and Majeſty, hitherto thou haſt appeared only as a *Son of man* [*Enoſh ſorry man*] hitherto *thou* haſt been made *ſhame*, and

Sect. 4.

The welcome God gave Chriſt when he came to heaven. The words he firſt ſpake to him.

Sect. 4. and a *curse*; not like my Son; but haſt appeared in the *likeneſſe of ſinfull fleſh*, and *of a ſervant* all beſmeared with blood; therefore this is the *firſt day* wherein I make account *I have begotten* thee; even now when thou firſt beginneſt to appeare out of that ſinful hue, and likeneſſe of ſinfull fleſh: now I owne thee for my Son indeede. And in him, hee owned us all, thus at his Reſurrection. And then laſt of all, when he comes into Heaven, the firſt word God ſpeakes to him is, Son, *ſit thou at my right hand*; thou haſt done all my worke, and now I will doe thine; (he gives him a *quietus eſt*) reſt here; *ſit here till I make* all thy enemies *thy foot-ſtoole*.

His ſitting downe at Gods right hand, affords a double evidence.

And now, what ſay you, are ye ſatisfied yet, that God is ſatisfied for your ſins? What ſuperabundant evidence muſt this, Chriſts ſitting at Gods right hand, give to a doubting heart? It argues firſt that Chriſt for his part hath perfectly done his work; and that there is no more left for him to doe by way of *ſatisfaction*: This the word [*ſitting*] implies. Secondly, It argues that God is as *fully ſatisfied* on his part: this his *ſitting* [*at Gods right hand*] implies.

For

Sect. 4.

For the *first*; The phrase of [*Sitting*] doth betoken *rest*, when *worke is fulfilled*, and finished: Christ was not to returne, till hee had accomplisht his worke *Heb.* 10. The Apostle comparing the force and excellency of Christs Sacrifice, with those of the Priests of the old Law, sayes that *Those Priests* [*stood*] *daily offering of Sacrifices, which can never take sins away.* Their *standing* implyed, that they could never make satisfaction so, as to say, *We have finished it*: But Christ (sayes he, *ver.* 12.) *after he had offered up one Sacrifice for ever,* [*sate downe*] &c. Marke how hee opposeth their *standing*, to his *sitting downe*. He sate as one who had done his work. Thus *Heb.* 4. 10. *He that is entred into his rest* (speaking of Christ, as I have elsewhere shewn) *hath ceased from his work as God from his.*

1. That he had perfectly & compleatly performed all his work that was to be done by him for our justification.

Secondly, this his being at *Gods right hand*, as strongly argues that God is satisfied: for if God had not been infinitely well pleased with him he would never have let him come so neere him; much lesse have advanced him so high as *his right hand*. And therefore in that place even now cited

2. That God also accepted it, and was infinitely well pleased with it.

Sect. 4. cited, (*Heb.*10.*ver.*10.11.12. compared with the former verſes) *this* is alledged as an *evidence* that (*Chriſt had for ever taken ſinnes away*, (which thoſe Prieſts of the Law could not doe, who therefore *often offered the ſame Sacrifice*, as *ver.*11.) That this *man, after he had offered one Sacrifice for ſinnes for ever* [*ſate downe on the right hand of God*] as thereby ſhewing (and that moſt manifeſtly) that hee had at that once offered up ſuch a ſatisfactory Sacrifice, as had pleaſed God for ever, and thereupon tooke up his *place* at Gods right hand, as an *evidence* of it; ſo poſſeſſing the higheſt place in Court. This *ſetting him* at Gods right hand, is a *token of ſpeciall* and higheſt favor. So *Kings*, whom they were moſt pleaſed with, they *did ſet* at *their right hands*, as *Solomon* did his *Mother*, 1 *Kings* 2.19. and ſo *Chriſt* the *Church* his *Queene*, *Pſal.*45.9. and it was a favor which God never after vouchſafed to any. *Heb.*1. *To which of all the Angels did hee ſay, Sit thou on my right hand*? Therefore *Phil.* 2. it is not onely ſaid that hee *exalted him*, but [*ſuperexaltavit*] *hee highly exalted him*, ſo as never any was exalted:

for

for hee was *made thereby higher then the heavens.* Thus much for the first Head. Sect. 4.

CHAP. IV.

Demonstrates in the second place what influence *Christs* Ascension *hath in a beleevers non-condemnation, upon that second premised consideration of Christs being a* Common person *for us. The security that Faith may have from thence.*

WE have thus seene what triumphing *evidence* and *demonstration*, both Christs Ascension, and sitting at Gods right hand, doe afford us for this, that *Christ* being considered *as* our *Surety*, hath therefore undoubtedly subdued our enemies and sins, & satisfied God. Let us now consider further, what force, *efficacy* and *influence* these two (both his *Ascending & sitting at Gods right hand* as *an Head* and *Common person* for us) have in them towards the *assured* working and accomplishment of the salvation of beleevers, his Elect; And from the consideration of this which is a second

Sect. 4. second Head, our faith may be yet further confirmed and strengthened in its *confidence. Who shall condemne? It is Christ, that is at Gods right hand.* I shall take in (as in the former) both his *Ascension* and *sitting at Gods right hand.*

By considering,

1. And first for his *Ascending*; consider these two things in it which may uphold our confidence.

1. That the great end of his Ascending and entring Heaven was to prepare a place for us, and bring us thither.

1. That *the great end* and purpose of that his *Ascending*, the errand, the businesse he Ascended for, was *to prepare and provide a place for us*, and to make way for our comming thither. This he assures his Disciples of, *Joh.* 14. 1. *In my Fathers house are many mansions*: I go to *prepare a place for you*: as *Joseph* was *secretly* sent before by Gods intendment to prepare a place in *Ægypt* for his brethren, whom Gods providence meant to bring after him: so more *openly* doth Christ *Ascend* to heaven, *professedly* declaring that to be his busines, [*I go to prepare a place for you*] and it is my Fathers house (saith he) where I can provide for you & make you welcom. You heard before, what welcome God gave Christ, when hee first arived there, and what he said to him, and Christ said (as it were) again

to

to God : I come not alone, I have much company, many of my brethren and followers to come after (for it was the *declared* and avowed *end* of his comming *to prepare* a place *for them*) I prayed when I was on earth, *that where I am they might be also*; (*John* 17.) and now I am come hither, my traine must come in too; I am not compleat without them; If you receive me, you must receive them also, and I am come to take up lodgings for them. Thus the Captain of our *salvation*, (*being made perfect through sufferings*, and then *crowned with glory and honour*, in *bringing of many Sons to Glory*; as *Heb.* 2. 10. of which company he was Captain) is brought in *saying* to God, *ver.* 13. *Behold I and the Children which God hath given me*, (he speakes it, when brought to glory) *I am their Captain*, and they must follow me; *Where I am they must be*:) *Lo I am* here, and am not to come alone, but to *bring to glory all the Children which thou hast given me*. They shall be all welcome (sayes God) there is room enough for them, [*many mansions:*] so that we need not feare, nor say in our hearts doubting and despairing, *Who shall ascend up to* Hea- Sect. 4.

Sect. 4. *Heaven for us, to bring* us thither? (as *Rom.* 10.) Christ hath done it: That is the first thing, but that is not all.

2. That he entred in our very names and stead, took possession in our right.

2. He *entred into Heaven in our very names*, and so is to be considered in that act as a *Common person*, (as well as in his Death and Resurrection) and so representing us, and also taking *possession* in our right, and *we in him*; as a Guardian takes possession for Heirs under age: *Heb.* 6. 20. *the fore-runner is for us entred* into Heaven, the [*fore-runner for us*] that is, *our fore-runner*. A *fore-runner* is a fore-runner of followers, and of such as stay not long behinde, and usually goes before as a harbinger, to provide, and take up lodgings for them that are to come, and writes the names of those who are to come, over the doores of such and such roomes, that they may not be taken up by any other. And so *Heb.* 12. 23. the *names of the first borne* are said to be *written in Heaven*, or enrolled there; And 1. *Pet.* 1. 5. their places or mansions in Heaven are said to be [*reserved for them*;] they stand empty as it were, yet taken up, so as none shall take them from them; their names and titles

titles to them being entred and *superscribed* And so he truly *entred* [*pro nobis*] *for us*, that is, in our stead, and in our names, as a *Common person*: and therefore the *High Priest* (in the Type) entred into the Holy of Holies, with all the *names of the Tribes* on his Breast: even so doth Christ with ours; even as a *Common person* in our names, thereby shewing that we are likewise to come after him: And this is more then simply to *prepare* a place; it is to *take possession* of a place, and give us a *Right* thereto. Sect. 4.

So that your Faith, through this consideration, may see your selves as good as in Heaven already; For Christ is entred as a *Common person* for you. Justification hath two parts; First, *Acquitance* from sinne, and freedome from *condemnation*; as here, *Who shall condemne?* And Secondly, *Justification of life*, as it is called *Rom.* 5. 18. that is, which gives title to eternall life: Now *dying* and *rising* as a Common person for us, procures the first, sets us perfectly enough in that state of freedome *from condemnation*; But then, this *Christ his entring in o* *Hea-*

What comfort faith may derive from this. We may behold our selves in heaven already.

Sect. 4. *Heaven*, as *a Common Perſon*, ſets us *farre above* that ſtate of Noncondemnation: it *placeth us in Heaven* with him. You would think your ſelves ſecure enough, if you were aſcended into Heaven. As *Heman* ſaid of his condition, that he was *free among the dead*, that is, he reckoned himſelfe (in his deſpaire) *free of the company* in Hell, as well as if he had been there; thinking his name enrolled among them, and his place taken up: ſo you may *reckon your ſelves* (as the word is, *Rom.* 6.) *free* of the *company of Heaven*, and your places taken up there; ſo that when you come to die, you ſhall goe to heaven as to your *own place*, by as true a title, though not of your own, as *Judas* went to Hell (which is called *his own place*, as (*Acts* 1.) the Apoſtle ſpeaks.) What a ſtart is this? how farre have you left below you pardon of ſinnes and non-condemnation? you are got above. How ſecurely may you ſay, *Who ſhall condemne? Chriſt hath aſcended, and entered into Heaven.* This is the firſt branch of the ſecond Head: *The influence* that Chriſts Aſcenſion hath into our juſtification and ſalvation.

CHAP.

Chap. V.

Demonstrateth in like manner what influence *Christs* sitting at Gods right hand *hath into our Justification, upon that second consideration, of his being* a Common person. *And the security faith may have from thence.*

THe consideration of his *sitting at Gods right hand*, may, in respect of *the influence* that it must needs have into our salvation, yet adde more *security* unto our *Faith*; if we either consider the *power* and *authority* of the *place* it selfe, and what it is to sit *at Gods right hand*; Or secondly, the *relation, the person* he beares and sustains in his *sitting* there, even of a *Common person*, in our right. And both these being put together will adde strength mutually each to other, and unto our faith; both to consider, *how great a prerogative* it is to sit at Gods right hand, and *what* such a one as sits there hath power to doe; and then that *Christ* (who is invested with this power, By considering 2 things.

Sect. 4. er, and advanced to it,) he *poſſeſſeth* it all *as our Head*, and in *our Right*, as a *Common perſon* repreſenting us. And

1. Conſider the *prerogatives of the place* it ſelfe; they are two:

§. 1. 1. *Soveraigny of Power*, and *Might*, and *Majeſty*.

1 The prerogatives of the place, which are two.

2. *Soveraignty of authority* and *judgment*: either of which may ſecure us from non-condemnation.

1 Soveraignty of Majeſty and power.

1. Soveraignty of power and might: this the phraſe [*ſitting at Gods right hand*] implies, *Mat.* 26. 64. where Chriſt himſelfe expoundeth the purport of it; *Hereafter you ſhall ſee the Sonne of man ſitting on the right hand* [*of power*:] And ſo 1 *Epheſ.* 20. 22. this is made the priviledge of Gods *ſetting him at his right hand*, *ver.* 20. that *he hath put all things under his feet*, *ver.* 22. A phraſe importing the higheſt ſoveraignty and power, not uſed of any Creatures, Angels, or men; none of them have other things *under their feet*, (*i. e.*) in ſo low a ſubjection as to be their vaſſals; eſpecially, not [*all*] *things*; and therefore by that very phraſe, *the putting all things under his feet*, the Apoſtle argues in that 2. to the *Heb.* that *that man* of whom *David*

All things committed to him.

said in the 8. *Psal.* (there cited by him) had spoken, was no other but Christ, not *Adam*, nor the *Angells*; for to neither of these hath God subjected *all things*, *ver.* 5. but to *Christ* only *ver.* 8. who *sits in the highest Throne of Majesty*; And to make his seat the easier, hath a world of *enemies made his footstoole*, even *all his enemies*, (so *Psal.* 110.) which is the highest triumph in the world. Now to what end hath God committed this power to him, but that himself'e may be his own Executor and Administrator, and performe all the Legacies which he made to those whom he dyed for? as the expression is *Heb.* c. 15, 16, and 17. *verses*, that none of his heirs might be wronged. Fairer dealing then this could there ever be, nor greater security given to us. This to have been Gods very end of investing *Christ* with this soveraigne power, is declared by Christ himselfe, *John* 17. 2. *Thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should* give *eternall life to as many as thou hast given him*: And accordingly at his *Ascension*, to comfort his Disciples in the fruit of their Ministery, *Matth.* 21. 18. he sayes, *All power is given* Sect. 4.

Which power God hath committed to him to save his Elect.

to

Sect. 4. *to me in Heaven and in Earth.* What holy confidence may this breed in us? *He is at Gods right hand*, and *we are in his hands*, *John* 10. 28. and *all his Enemies are under his feete*, *Who then can pull us out? Revel.* 1. 18. saies Christ, *I have the Keyes of Hell and Death.* The *Key* is still taken in the Scripture phrase the Ensigne of *power* and *authority.* Now Christ hath, both, the *Keyes* of *Death*, the postern gate out of this world, and of *Hell*, even of the broad gates of that eternall prison; So as none of his can be fetched out of this world by Death, but Christ he must first open the *doore*; much lesse, can any goe to Hell without his warrant. Yea, *Matth.* 16. 19. He hath *the Keyes of the Kingdome of Heaven* also, to open to whom he will. By his *Resurrection*, we may see and rest assured, that he hath the *keyes of Death* and *Hell*, (for he unlockt the doores, and came out from thence) and by his *Ascension* and *sitting at Gods right hand*, that he hath the *keyes of Heaven*, whose doore he hath unlockt, and now set open. What need we then fear *Hell*, when Christ our Redeemer hath the keyes of it?

What security this affords.

Se-

Secondly, to sit at Gods right hand imports *all judgement to bee committed to him*: for *sitting* was a posture of *Judges*; a phrase used to note out their authority. So *Prov.* 20.8. *A king that* [*sitteth*] *on the throne of judgement, scattereth the wicked with his eyes*: and so doth Christ his and our enemies. See what Christ sayes, *John.* 5.21.22. *The Sonne of man raiseth up whom he will; for the Father* [*judgeth*] *no man, but* [*hath committed all judgement*] *to the Sonne.* Now if he who loved us so, and dyed for us, be the *Judge* himselfe, then *Who shall condemne? Christ sits on Gods right hand.* This is the very inference that after followeth, *ver.* 24. of that 5. *chap.* of *John*, *He that beleeves shall not come into condemnation*: Christ utters it upon his having said he had *all judgement committed to him*, in the foregoing *ver.* 22. on purpose that he might from that consideration ascertain Beleevers of their *non-condemnation*. For what need wee feare any under-officers, when we have the Judge thus for us? Sect. 4. 2. Prerogat. All judgment & authority committed to him.

§. 2.

But then (in the last place) add that second particular mentioned to all these, that Christ *sits there* as *an Head*, 2. Particular Both which being his, as he is an head to his Elect.

Sect. 4. as a *Common person*, for us. First as an *Head*; so *Eph.* 1. when the Apostle had so hyperbolically set forth his *power*, of being advanced *unto Gods right hand, ver.* 21. *farre above all Principalities and powers, and above every name that is named, not only in this world, but that which is to come*; and how God *hath put all things under his feete*: hee adds, and [*hath given him to bee head over all things* to the *Church.*] Observe now, hee is said to sit there *over all* things, not in his *owne pure personall right* simply, as it is his *inheritance*, as he is the Son of God, (as *Heb.* 1. *ver.* 3. 4. 5. it is affirmed of him) but he sits thus over all as a *Head to the Church.* That same [*over all things*] comes in there, betweene his being a [*Head*] and [*to the Church,*] on purpose to shew, that he is *set over all, in relation to his Church*: So that we see, that our relation is involved, and our right included in this exaltation of his, and so put into his Commission; for this prerogative is there said to be *given him.* Hee sits not simply as a *Son*, but as an *Head*; and he sits not as an *Head* without a *Body*, and therfore must have his members up to him:

Wherfore

Wherfore in the next *ver.* it is added, *Which is his body, yea, his fulnesse*: so as Christ is not compleat without all his Members, and would leave heaven, if any one were wanting; It were a lame maimed body, if it wanted but a toe. Christ is our *Element*, and he being ascended, wee are sparks that fly upwards to him. He took our *Flesh*, and carried it unto heaven, and left us his *Spirit* on earth, and both as pawns and earnests that we should follow. Sect. 4. Therefore he must have all his members up to him.

Nay farther yet, he is not only said to sit as our Head, but we are also said to *sit together with him*: That is, made the up-shot of all in the next Chapter *Ephes.* 2. 6. So that as wee *arose* with him, (He being considered as a Common person) and *ascended* with him, as was said; So yet farther, we *sit together with him in the highest heavens*, (as there) ἐν τοῖς ἐπουρανίοις [*in supercoelestibus*] *in his exalted estate above the heavens*, (as is the meaning of that phrase:) not that *Christs being at Gods right hand* (if taken for that *sublimity of power*) is communicable to us; that is Christs prerogative only: So *Heb.* 1. 5. *To which of all the Angels did he ever say, Sit thou at my right* Especially seeing he is as representing them, and they sit together with him. How to sit at Gods right hand is Christs prerogative alone.

Sect. 4. *hand*? Yet ſo, as his *ſitting in heaven*, as it is indefinitely expreſſed, is underſtood to bee as in our right and ſtead, and as a Common perſon; and ſo is to aſſure us of *our ſitting* there with him, *in our proportion*. So *Rev.* 3. 21. it is expreſly rendred as the minde and intendment of it, ***Him that overcommeth, I will grant to ſit with mee in my throne, even as I alſo am ſet downe with my Father in his throne.*** There is a *proportion* obſerved, though with an *inequality* : *we* ſit on *Chriſts Throne*, but *Hee* only on his *Fathers Throne*: that is, *Chriſt* onely ſits at *Gods right hand*; but *wee* on *Chriſts right hand*: And ſo the *Church* is ſaid to be at Chriſts *right hand*, *Pſalme* 45. 9. Yea further, (and it may afford a farther comfort to us in the point in hand) this repreſents, that at the latter day *wee* ſhall ſit as *Aſſeſſors* on his *Judgement ſeate* to judge the World with him. So *Mat.* 19. 28. and *Luke* 22. 30. *When the Son of man ſhall ſit in his glory ye ſhall ſit upon* 12 *Thrones, judging the Tribes of Iſrael.* So as this *our ſitting* with him is ſpoken in reſpect to *Judgment*, & to *giving the ſentence* of it; not a ſentence ſhall paſſe without your votes

And yet, how wee may be ſaid to ſit in his Throne.

And repreſents our ſitting at the latter day as Judges with him.

votes: So as you may by faith not only look on your selves, as already in heaven, sitting with Christ, as a Common person in your right; but you may look on your selves as Judges also. So that if any sinne should arise to accuse or condemne, yet it must be with your votes. And what greater security can you have then this? for you must condemne your selves, if you be condemned: you may very well say, *Who shall accuse? Who shall condemn?* for you will never pronounce a fatal sentence upon your own selves. Sect. 4.

And so if we be condemned it must be with our owne votes and consent.

As then *Paul* triumphed here, so may wee; for at the present wee sit in heaven with Christ, and have all our enemies under our feete. As *Joshuah* made his servants set their feete on the necks of those five Kings; so God would have us by *faith* to doe the like to all ours; for one day wee shall doe it. And if you say, *We see it not*; I answer, as *Heb.* 2. the Apostle saith of Christ himselfe, [*Now we see not yet*] *all things put under him*, v. 8. [Now not under him] for he now *sits in heaven*, [and *expects*] by faith, *when his enemies shall be made his foote-stoole*, as *Heb.* 10. 12, and 13 *ver.*) [*but we see*] (for

The triumph of faith thereupon.

Sect. 4. the preſent) *Jeſus crowned with glory and honour*, *ver.* 9. and ſo may be ſure that the thing is as good as done; and we may, in ſeeing him crowned, ſee our ſelves *ſitting with him*, and quietly wait and *expect* (as Chriſt himſelfe doth) till all be accompliſhed, and our ſalvation finiſhed and fully perfected.

His Interceſſion now remaines only to be ſpoken of, which yet will afford further conſiderations to ſtrengthen our Faith. His *ſitting at Gods right hand* notes out his *power over all, from God*: But his Interceſſion, *all power and favour with God* for us; ſo as to effect our ſalvation for us, with Gods higheſt contentment and good will, and all yet further to ſecure us. *Who ſhall condemn, &c.*

SECT. V.

The triumph of faith from Chriſts INTERCESSION.

ROM. 8. 34.
Who alſo maketh interceſſion for us.

CHAP. I.

A connexion of this with the former: and how this addes a further ſupport. Two things out of the Text propounded to be handled. Firſt, The concurrency *of influence that Chriſts interceſſion hath into our Salvation. Secondly, The* ſecutity *that Faith may have there-from for our* Juſtification.

WE have ſeene Chriſt *ſitting at Gods right hand* as a Judge and King, having all authority of ſaving or condemning, in his own hands; and having all power in Heaven and Earth,

Sect. 5. to give eternall life to them that beleeve: And the confidence that this giveth us.

Let us now come to his *Interceſſion*, and the *influence* which it hath into our *Juſtification* and ſalvation; which as it ſtrikes the *laſt* ſtroake to make all ſure; ſo, as great a ſtroake as any of the former: therefore (as you have heard) that there was an *Allſufficiency in his Death* [*Who ſhall condemne? it is Chriſt that died:*] a *Rather* in his Reſurrection, [*yea rather is riſen again:*] *a much rather* [πολλῷ μᾶλλον] that he *lives* and is at *Gods right hand*; *Rom.* 5. 10. The Apoſtle riſeth yet higher to an εἰς τὸ παντελὲς [*a ſaving to the utmoſt*] put upon his *interceſſion*, *Heb.* 7. 25. *Wherefore he is able to ſave to the utmoſt, ſeeing he ever lives to make interceſſion.* So that if you could ſuppoſe there were any thing which none of all the former three could doe or effect for us, yet his interceſſion could doe it to the *utmoſt*; for it ſelfe is the uttermoſt and higheſt: If *money* would purchaſe our Salvation, his *Death* hath done it, which he laid down as a price & an equivalent ranſom, (as it is in 1 *Tim.* 2. 6.) If *power* & *authority*

authority would effect it, his *sitting* at Gods right hand, invested with all power in heaven & earth, shall be put forth to the utmost to effect it. If *favor* & intreaties added to all these (which oft times doth as much as any of those other) were needfull, he will use the utmost of this also, and for ever make *intercession.* So that if Love, Money, or Power (any of them, or all of them) will save us, we shall be sure to be saved, *saved to the utmost* [εἰς τὸ παντελὲς] all manner of waies, by all manner of meanes; saved over and over. Sect. 5.

For the cleering of this last generall head, The *Intercession of Christ*, (and the *influence* and *security* it hath into our *faith* and *justification*) I shall handle two things, and both proper to the Text.

First, Shew *how* unto all those other fore-mentioned *Acts* of *Christ* for us, this of *Intercession also* is to be added by him for the effecting our salvation, and the securing our hearts therein. This that particle [*Also*] in the Text calls for; *Who also maketh intercession for us.*

Secondly, to shew the security that faith may assume & fetch from this In-

Sect. 5. terceſſion, of Chriſt, or his *praying* for us in heaven; *Who ſhall condemne? it is Chriſt, that maketh interceſſion for us.*

Chap. II.

The firſt Head explained by two things. First, Interceſſion one part of *Chriſts* Prieſthood, *and the moſt* excellent *part of it.*

TOwards the Explanation of the firſt of theſe, two things are to be done.

Firſt, To ſhew how great, and neceſſary, and how excellent a part of Chriſts Prieſthood, his *Interceſſion* and *praying for us* in heaven is.

Secondly, To ſhew the peculiar influence that Interceſſion hath into our ſalvation; and ſo the reaſons for which God ordained this work of *Interceſſion* for us, and that in heaven, to be added to all the former.

For the firſt, I will proceed therein by degrees.

Firſt, It is one part of his Prieſthood. You muſt know, that Chriſt is not entred into heaven ſimply as a *forerunner* (which hath been explained) to take

take up places for you, but as a Prieſt alſo, *Made a Prieſt after the order of Melchiſedec*; which is more then ſimply a *Fore-runner*. Yea, his ſitting at Gods right hand is not only as a *King* armed with power and authority to ſave us, but he *ſits* there as a *Prieſt* too; Thus *Heb.*8. 1. *We have ſuch an High-Prieſt who is ſet down at the right hand of the Majeſty on high.* Sect. 5

In the old Levitical Prieſt-hood, the High-prieſts office had two parts, both which concurred to make them High-Prieſts. Two parts of the High Prieſts office

First, Oblation, or offering the Sacrifice.

Secondly, Preſentation of it in the Holy of Holies, with Prayer and Interceſſion unto God, to accept it for the ſinnes of the people. The one was done *without*, the other *within* the Holy of Holies. This you may ſee in many places, eſpecially *Levit.* 16. 11, 15, 16. where you have the Law about the High-prieſts entring into the Holy of Holies; he was not to come into the holy place, till firſt he had offered a Sacrifice for himſelfe and the people, *ver.* 11. and 15. and this *without*. Then ſecondly, when he had killed it, he

Sect. 5. he was to enter with the bloud of it into the Holy of Holies; and ſprinkle the Mercy-ſeat therein with it, *ver.* 14, 17. and to goe *with Incenſe*, and *cauſe a cloud to ariſe* over the Mercie-ſeat: And this you have alſo, *Heb.* 13. 11. it is ſaid, that *The bloud of thoſe beaſts that were burnt without the camp, was brought into the Sanctuary by the High-Prieſt*: And in that 16. of *Levit.* you ſhall finde the *Atonement* made as well by the *bloud*, when brought into the Holy place, *ver.* 16. as by the *killing of the beaſt*, *ver.* 11. Both theſe were acts of the High-prieſthood for Atonement.

And this was done in a Type of the Prieſtly office of Chriſt, and the parts thereof: So *Heb.* 9. 23. he calls all thoſe tranſactions under the Ceremoniall Law, the [*patterns*] *of things heavenly*; inſtancing in this part of Chriſts office, *ver.* 24. *For Chriſt* (ſaies he) *is not entred into the Holy places made with hands*, (as that was) *which are* [*the figures of the true,*] *but into Heaven it ſelfe, to appeare in the preſence of God for us.* Now then in anſwer to this Type, there are two diſtinct parts of Chriſts Prieſt-hood.

Firſt,

Sect. 5.

First, the *offering himself a Sacrifice* up to death, as *Heb.* 9. 26. which answers to the killing of the Sacrifice *without the Holy of Holies*; for answerably he was crucified *without the City*, *Heb.* 13. 12.

1. Christ offering up himself.

Secondly, he *carried* this his *blood* into the *Holy of Holies*, namely the *Heavens*, *Heb.* 9. 12. where he *appears*, *ver.* 24. and there also *prayes* in the force of that blood. And the Type of those prayers was that *cloud of Incense* made by the High-Priest: so it is expressly interpreted. *Rev.* 8. 3. &c. The Angell Christ is said to have had *much Incense, to offer it with the prayers of all the Saints*; Which Incense is his own prayers in heaven, which he continually puts up when the Saints pray on earth, and so perfumes all their prayers, and procures all blessings for them.

2. Entring in to the *Heavens* to *intercede.*

Both these parts of his Priesthood the Apostle *John* mentions in his first Epistle, *Chap.* 2. *ver.* 2. where, as he cals Jesus Christ a *propitiation for our sinnes*, (that is, an *Oblation*, or *Sacrifice* offered up for us.) so likewise he cals him our *Advocate*; both going to make up this his office. And indeed,

Both proved

this

Sect. 5. this latter of Interceſſion, and bringing his bloud into the Holy of Holies (or heaven) is but the ſame action continued. That bloud which he offered with teares and ſtrong cryes on the Croſſe, (where he likewiſe interceded,) the ſame blood he continues virtually to offer up with prayers in the heavens, and makes Atonement by both; onely with this difference: *On earth* though he *interceded*, yet he *more eminently offered up* himſelfe; *In heaven*, he more eminently intercedes, and doth but *preſent that Offering*.

Without Interceſſion he had not been a perfect Prieſt.

Secondly, this was ſo neceſſary a part of his Prieſt-hood, that without it he had not been a *compleat Prieſt*. Thus *Heb.* 8. 4. *If he were on earth, he ſhould not be a Prieſt*; That is, If he ſhould have abode on earth, he ſhou'd not have been a *compleat Prieſt*. *Paul* ſaith not, that if he had offered that his ſacrifice on earth, he had not been a Prieſt, for that was neceſſary; but that if he had ſtaid ſtill on earth, after he had offered it, he had not been a Prieſt, that is, a perfect Prieſt; for he had then left his office imperfect, and had done it but by halves, ſeeing this other part of it (the work of interceſſion)

cession) lay still upon him to be acted in heaven. Thus the High-Priest, his Type, if he had onely offered Sacrifice without the Holy of Holies, had not been a perfect High-Priest; For to enter into the Holy of holies, and to act the part of a Priest there, was the proper, peculiar work of *the High-Priest*, as such. Which shews, that Christ had not been an High-priest, if he had not gone to heaven, and Priested it there too, (as I may so speak) as well as upon earth. Yea, if Christ had not gone to heaven, and were not now become a Priest there, then the Leviticall Priest-hood were still in force, and should yet share the honour with him; and the High-priest must continue still to goe into the Holy of holies. To this purpose you may observe, that so long as Christ was on earth, though risen, the Types of the Law held in force, and were not to give way, till all the truth signified by their Ministery was fully accomplisht; and so, not untill Christ was gone into heaven as a Priest, and there had begun to doe all that which the High-priest had done in the Holy of holies, and

Sect. 5.

This the peculiar worke of the High-Priest, who was in this Christs type.

as

Sect. 5. as his Type fore-ſignified. And this is plainly the meaning of what followes (in that *Heb.*8. *ver.*4.) as the reaſon or demonſtration why that Chriſt ſhould not have been a Prieſt, if he had not gone to heaven, (not only as a King, but as a *Prieſt* too, as he affirmed, *ver.*1.) *Seeing* (ſayes he) *that there are Prieſts upon earth, that doe offer gifts according to the Law.* The force of the Reaſon lyes thus: There are already Prieſts, and that of a Tribe he was not of, that *offer gifts on earth*, before he came into the world. And therefore if that had beene all his Prieſt-hood, to be a *Prieſt on earth*, they would plead poſſeſſion before him, having been Prieſts before him. And then he further backs his reaſon by this, that *the ſe Prieſts ſerved* (as it follows *ver.* 5.) *unto the example and ſhadow of heavenly things.* And therefore it is onely a *reall* Prieſt-hood in Heaven which muſt put them out of place; and till ſuch a Prieſt-hood comes, they muſt ſerve ſtill, for the *truth* (which theſe ſerved to ſhadow out) is not till then fulfilled. This you have alſo, *Ch.* 9.8. *The firſt Tabernacle was to ſtand* untill a *Prieſt went into Heaven,*

Heaven, and did act that office there; Sect. 5.
So that if Chriſt will be a *Prieſt alone*, he muſt become a Prieſt interceding in Heaven; or elſe High-prieſts muſt come up again, and ſhare that office with him, and ſo he ſhould as good as fall from his office, and loſe all that he had done.

Yea, thirdly, *this part* of his Prieſthood is of the two the more eminent, yea the *top*, the *height* of his Prieſthood; And this is held forth to us in the Types of both thoſe *two orders* of Prieſthood that were before him, and figures of him, both that of *Aaron*, and *Melchiſedec*: 1. This was typified out in that Leviticall Prieſthood of *Aaron* and his fellowes; The *higheſt ſervice* of that office, was the going into the *Holy of Holies*, and making an *atonement* there; yea, this was the height of the High-prieſts honor, that he did this alone, and did conſtitute the *difference* between *him (as he was High-prieſt)* and *other Prieſts*; For they killed and offered the ſacrifices without as well as he, every ordinary Prieſt did that; But none but the *High-prieſt* was to approach the Holy of Holies with bloud, and this *but*

once

Sect. 5. *once a yeere.* Thus *Heb.* 9. 6, 7. *The Priests* (namely those inferiour Priests) *went alwayes* (that is, daily, morning and evening) *into the first Tabernacle,* (or Court of Priests, which was without the Holy of holies) *accomplishing the service of God*; namely, that offering of the daily sacrifice: *But into the second* (namely, the Holy of holies) *went the* [*High-Priest*] *alone every yeere*: So then this was that high and transcendent prerogative of that *High-priest* then, and which indeed made him *High-priest*: and answerably, the highth of our High-priests office (although he alone also could offer a satisfactory sacrifice, as the Apostle shews, *Heb.* 9. and 10. yet comparatively) lay in this, that he entred into the heavens by his bloud, and is set down on the Majesty on high, and in the vertue of his sacrifice there doth intercede. I know but one place that calleth him the *Great High-Priest*, (higher by farre then *Aaron*) and that is *Heb.* 4. 14, 16. And then it is in *this* respect, that *he is passed into the Heavens*, as it follows there.

2. The excellency of this part of his Priesthood was likewise typified out by

by *Melchisedechs* Priesthood, which Sect. 5.
the Apostle argueth to have beene much more excellent then that of *Aarons*, in as much as *Levi*, *Aarons* Father, payed Tythes to this *Melchisedech* in *Abrahams* loyns. Now *Melchisedech* was his type, not so much in respect of his oblation, or offering of *Sacrifice*, (that work which Christ performed *on earth*) but in respect of that work which he [*for ever*] performs in *heaven*: therefore that same clause (*for ever*) still comes in, in the quotation and mention of *Melchisedechs* Priesthood in that Epistle; because in respect of that his continuall intercession in Heaven, *Melchisedech* was properly Christs type. And accordingly you may observe, *Psal.* 110. when is it that that speech comes in, [*Thou art a Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedech*] but then, when God had him *sitting at his right hand*, *ver.* 1. So that as the transcendent excellency of *Christs* Priesthood was typified out by *Melchisedechs* rather then *Aarons*, as being the better Priesthood of the two; so this, the most excellent part thereof, was typified out thereby, namely, that which Christ

Sect. 5. Christ for ever acteth in Heaven.

This the chiefe argument of the epistle to the *Heb.*

And 3. To confirm this, you shall find *this* to bee made the *top notion of this Epistle to the Heb.* and the scope of it chiefly to discourse of Christs eternal Priesthood in heaven; and to shew how therein *Melchisedec* was a type of him. This is not only expressed both in *Heb.*7.21.25. where this same [*for ever*] is applied to his Intercession, *ver.* 25. but more expresly in *Chap.* 8. 1. where the Apostle puts the emphasis upon this part of his Priesthood, saying, *That of the things which wee have spoken, or which are to be spoken,* (for the word ὅτι τοῖς λεγομένοις will beare either) *this is* (saith he) *the summe* or *argument* of all: the word is κεφαλαίον, & signifies as well *the head, the chief, the top* of all, and above all, as it doth the sum of all: And what is it that he thus professeth to be both the main subject and argument of this Epistle, and the top and eminent thing in Christ he intends to discourse of? It follows, That *We have* [*such an high Priest*] *as is set down at the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens.* And of the *Priestly office* he alone discourseth both *before* and *after*; and in the following verses

verses calleth his Ministery or *office* (in respect to this) *A more excellent Ministery, ver. 6. he being such a Priest as was higher then the heavens*, as hee had set him out in the latter part of the former *Chap.* And therfore you may observe, how in his Preface to this Epistle to the *Heb. c. 1. v. 3.* he holds up this to our eye, as the argument of the whole, saying, *When hee had by himselfe purged our sinnes, hee sate downe on the right hand of the Majesty on high.* Sect. 5.

Yea, to conclude this, *All* his *Priesthood* would have been ineffectuall, if he had not acted the part of a Priest in heaven, by *Intercession* there: for by his death he did but begin the execution of his office; in heaven hee ends it: and if he had not fulfilled his office in both, the worke of our salvation had not been fully perfected: it was therfore as necessary as oblation it selfe. Not but that his *Death* was a perfect oblation; it was *perfect for an oblation*, to which *as such* nothing can be added. There needed no more, nor any other price to bee paid for us; *by that one offering* hee *perfects us for ever*; as *heb. 10. 14. and became himselfe perfect thereby, heb, 5, 9.* And *Cap. 6. v. 12.*

His oblation else would have been ineffectuall.

By

Sect. 5. *By his own bloud he entred into the holy place, [having obtained] eternall redemption for us.* Marke how before he entred by his bloud into heaven, he had fully [*obtained*] a redemption, and that *eternall*, that is, for ever sufficient; which done, he became through his Intercession in heaven, *an applying cause* of eternall salvation, as *Heb.* 5. 10, 11. hath it. So that as in his death he paid the full summe we owed; unto which payment nothing can be added, (no not by himselfe, though he would come and dye againe; it was made at that [*once*] as *perfect* (that is, *for an oblation*) as ever himselfe could make:) But yet still by Gods ordination there remained *another* further *action* of another kinde, that was to be added to this of oblation; and that is *Intercession*, or *praying* for us in *heaven*: otherwise our salvation by his death were not perfected; for if his Priesthood be imperfect, our salvation then must needs be so. The presenting of that his Sacrifice in heaven, was the *consummation of his Priesthood*; and the performance of that part there, the *perfection of it.*

CHAP.

Chap. III.

The second: *The speciall* peculiar influence *that* Intercession *hath into our* Salvation *and* Justification, *and the* Reasons *why God appointed it to be added to the former.*

TO come now more particularly to shew that proper and speciall influence that Intercession hath into our Salvation, and what it addes to the Oblation of Christs death (though in its kinde perfect) in order, to the effecting our salvation; and so shew the more inward Reasons why God ordained (for upon his ordination alone this is to be put) this work of Intercession in heaven to be joyned with his death. And both these I shall put promiscuously together; for in laying down the *Reasons* why God thus ordered our *salvation* to be brought about by it, that *influence* also which *Intercession* hath into our *salvation*, will together therewith appeare.

The Reasons either respect 1. *God himselfe*, who will have us *so saved*, *as himselfe*

Sect. 5. *himſelfe* may be moſt *glorified*; Or 2. reſpect us and our ſalvation; God [*ordering all*] the links of *this golden chaine* of the *Cauſes of our ſalvation*, as ſhould make [*our ſalvation moſt ſure*] and ſtedfaſt, (as *David* in his laſt Song ſpeaks, 2 *Sam.* 23. 5.) Or 3. reſpect *Chriſt* himſelfe, whoſe glory is to be held up, and throughout continued, as the Author and Finiſher of our Salvation, Beginner and Ender of our Faith and Juſtification.

First ſort of reaſons reſpect God.

The firſt ſort of Reaſons reſpect God himſelfe.

1. In generall. God will be dealt with like himſelfe.

1. In generall: God will be dealt withall like himſelfe, in and throughout the whole way of our ſalvation, from firſt to laſt, and carry it all along as a Superiour wronged, and ſo keep a diſtance between himſelfe and ſinners, who ſtill are to *come to him by a Prieſt*, and a *Mediator*, (as *Heb.* 7. 25. hath it;) upon whoſe mediation and interceſſion *for ever*, (as there) (at leaſt till the day of Judgement) their Salvation doth depend: and therefore though Chriſt in his diſpenſation of all *to us downward*, doth carry it as a King, as one having all power to juſtifie and condemne, (as hath been ſhewne)

shewne) yet *upward, towards God*, he carries it as a *Priest* who must still intercede to doe all that which he hath power to doe as a King: Therefore in the second *Psal.* after that God had set him up as *King upon his holy hill, ver.* 6. namely, in heaven, and so had committed all power in heaven and earth to him; then he *must* yet *ask* all that he would have done; *Ask of me, and I will give thee*, &c. *ver.* 8. sayes God to him: For though he be a King, yet he is Gods King; *I have set* [*My King*] &c. and by asking him, God will be acknowledged to be above him. But more of this hereafter. Sect. 5.

But 2. more *particularly*. God hath two attributes which he would have most eminently appear in their highest glory by Christs effecting our salvation, namely, *Justice* and *Free-grace*; and therefore hath so ordered the bringing about of our salvation, as that Christ must apply himselfe in a more especiall manner unto each of these, by way of *Satisfaction* to the one, of *Entreaty* to the other: Justice will be known to be Justice, and dealt with upon its own tearms; and Grace will be acknowledged to be Free-

2. More particularly, for the glory of Gods *Free-grace*.

Sect. 5. grace, throughout the accompliſhment of our ſalvation. You have both theſe joyned, *Rom.* 3. 23, 24, 25. *Being juſtified* [*freely throug his grace*] *by the* [*Redemption*] *that is in Chriſt Jeſus: That he might be* [*juſt*] *& the juſtifier of him that beleeves.* Here is *higheſt Juſtice*, and the *freeſt Grace* both met to ſave us, and both ordained by God to be *declared* and *ſet forth*, as *ver.* 25. 26. have it. I ſaid before, that God juſtifies and ſaves us through free grace, ſo abſolutely, freely, as if his Juſtice had had no ſatisfaction. Now therefore our ſalvation depending and being carried on, even in the application of it, by a continuation of *Grace*, in a *free* way, notwithſtanding ſatisfaction unto Juſtice; therefore this *free grace* muſt be ſought to, and treated with like it ſelfe, and applied unto in all, and the ſoveraignty and *freeneſſe* of it acknowledged in all, even as well as *Gods Juſtice* had the honour to be *ſatisfied* by a *price* paid unto it, that ſo the ſeverity of it might appeare and be held forth in our ſalvation. Thus God having *two attributes* eminently to be dealt withall, his Juſtice and his free Grace, it was meet

Which looks to be applied unto in a way of entreaty and Interceſſion.

meet that there should be two *eminent* Sect. 5.
actions of *Christs Priesthood*, wherein he should apply himselfe to each according to their kinde, and as the nature and glory of each doth require. And accordingly in his death he deales with *Justice*, by laying downe a sufficient price; and in his Intercession, he entreateth *Free grace*, and thus both come to be alike acknowledged. In the 4. *Heb.* 16. we are encouraged to *come boldly* [to the *Throne of grace*] because we *have an High-Priest entred into the Heavens*: Observe how it is called [*a Throne of grace*] which our High-priest now in heaven officiates at: So called, because his Priesthood there deales with free grace chiefly; it is a Throne *of Grace*, and so to be sued unto; therefore he treateth with God by *way of Intercession.* Of this *Throne of Grace* in heaven, the *Mercie-seat* in the Holy of holies was the Type. And as there the High-Priest was to bring the *bloud* and *Mercie-seat* together, he was to sprinkle the blood upon it; so Christ. And as the High-priest was to goe into the Holy of holies by *bloud*, so with *Incense* also, (that is, *Prayer*;)

Sect. 5. To ſhew, that *Heaven* is *not opened* by meere *Juſtice*, or bringing onely a *price* in hand for it; but by *Grace* alſo, and that muſt be *entreated*; and therefore when the Prieſt was within that holy place, he was to make a *Cloud* over the Mercie-ſeat, (which cloud of Incenſe is Prayer, whereof Incenſe was the Type, *Rev.* 2. 8.) And thence it is, that Chriſt hath as much work of it ſtill in heaven as ever, though of another kinde: He dealt with *Juſtice* here *below*, to *ſatisfie* it, and here got mony enough to pay the debt; but in *heaven* he deales with *Mercy*. Therefore all the Grace he beſtowes on us, he is ſaid firſt to *receive* it, even now when in heaven. *Acts* 2. 33. it is ſaid of him, after his going to heaven, and that he was *exalted*, &c. that *he received the promiſe of the Spirit*, which *Joh.* 14. 16. he told them he would *pray for*. And this is part of the meaning of that in *Pſal.* 68. 18. *He aſcended up on high, and* [*received*] *gifts for men*, ſayes the Pſalmiſt: The Apoſtle renders it, *Epheſ.* 4. [*gave*] but you ſee, it was by *receiving* them firſt, as fruits of his Interceſſion and asking after his aſcending; He is ſaid both to *give*, as being

being all of his own purchase, and as having power as a King also both to doe and bestow all he doth; and yet withall he is said to *receive* all that he *gives*, because *as a Priest* he intercedes for it, and *asks it.* Free grace requires this. This is the first thing. Sect. 5.

2. Gods justice stood upon it.

Yea, Secondly, Justice it self might stand a little upon it, though there was enough in Christ his death to satisfie it; yet having been wronged, it stood thus far upon it, (as those to whom a debt is due, use to doe) namely, to have the money brought home to Gods dwelling house, and laid down there. God is resolved not to stoop one whit unto man, no nor to Christ his Surety. Justice will not onely be satisfied, and have a sufficient ransome collected and paid, as at Christs death; but he must come and bring his bags up to heaven; Justice will be paid it upon the Mercie-seat: For so in the Type the blood was to be carried into the Holy of holies, and sprinkled upon the Mercie-seat. And therefore his Resurrection, Ascension, &c. were but as the breaking through all enemies, and subduing

Sect. 7. them, to the end to bring this price or satisfaction to the Mercie-seat; and so God having his money by him, might not want wherewithall to pardon Sinners: so as the blood of Christ is currant money, not only on earth, but in heaven too, whither all is brought, which is for our comfort, that all the treasure which should satisfie God, is safely conveyed thither, and our Surety with it.

Second sort of reasons, it was best for effecting our salvation.

The second sort of reasons why God ordained Christs Intercession to be joyned to his Death, are taken from what was the best way to effect and make sure our salvation, and secure our hearts therein: and these reasons will shew the peculiar *influence* that Intercession hath into our Salvation, and therein as in the former.

1. In general, God would have us saved all manner of wayes.

First *in generall*, God would have our salvation made sure, and us saved all manner of wayes, over and over. 1. By *ransome* and *price*, (as Captives are redeemed) which was done by his *Death*, which of it selfe was enough; for it is said, *Heb.* 10. to *perfect us for ever.* 2. By *power* and *rescue*; so in his *Resurrection*, and *Ascension*, and

and *ſitting at Gods right hand*, which alſo was ſufficient. Then 3. againe by *Interceſſion*, a way of favour and *entreaty*; and this likewiſe would have been enough, but God would have all wayes concurre in it, whereof notwithſtanding not one could faile; a three-fold cord, whereof each twine were ſtrong enough, but all together muſt of neceſſity hold. Sect. 5.

Secondly, The whole *Application* of his Redemption, both in *juſtifying* and *ſaving* of us firſt and laſt, hath a ſpeciall dependance upon this his *Interceſſion*. This all Divines on all ſides doe attribute unto it, whilſt they put this difference between the influence of his Death, and *that* of his Interceſſion into our ſalvation; calling his death *Medium impetrationis*, that is, *the meanes of procurement* or *obtaining* it for us; But his interceſſion, *Medium Applicationis*, the *meanes of applying* all *unto us*. Chriſt purchaſeth ſalvation by the one, but *poſſeſſeth* us of it by the other. Some have attributed the *Application* of *Juſtification* to his *Reſurrection*; but it is much more proper to aſcribe it to his *Interceſſion*; (and what caſuall influence his

2. The *Application* of Redemption to us from Chriſts Interceſsion.

Sect. 5. *Resurrection* hath into our *Justification*, hath been afore in the third Section declared.) But that his eternall *Priesthood* in heaven, and the work of its *Intercession*, is the *applying* cause of our eternall *salvation*, in all the parts of it, first and last, seemes to me to be the result of the connexion of the 8, 9, and 10. *verses* of the 5. *Chap.* to the *Hebrewes*: For having spoken of his *obedience* and *sufferings* unto *death*, *ver.* 8. and how he thereby was *made perfect*, *ver.* 9. he sayes, *And being* (thus first) *made perfect*, *he became* [*the Author*] (or applying cause, αἴτιος) *of eternall salvation*, *unto all them that obey him*, and this by his being become an *eternall Priest in Heaven*, after he was thus perfected by sufferings: for so it follows, *ver.* 10. *Called of God an High-priest*, *after the order of Melchisedech*: And *Melchisedechs Priesthood* was principally the type of his *Priesthood in heaven*, as was before declared. One leading instance to shew that his Intercession was to be the applying cause of salvation, was given by Christ whilst he was on earth, thereby manifesting what much more was to be done by him in heaven, through his

Inter-

Intercession there: when he was on the Crosse, and as then offering that great sacrifice for sin, he at that time also joyned prayers for the justification of those that crucified him, *Father [forgive] them, for they know not what they doe*: So fulfilling that in *Esay* 53. *ult. He bare the sins of many, and made Intercession for the transgressors.* And the efficacy of that prayer then put up, was the cause of the conversion of those three thousand, *Acts* 2. whom *ver.* 35. the Apostle had expresly charged with the *crucifying* of Christ, whom *ye by wicked hands have taken, crucified, and slaine.* These were the first fruits of his Intercession, whose prayers still doe reap and bring in the rest of the crop, which in all ages is to grow up unto God on earth. Sect. 5.

3. And *more particularly*, as the whole Application in generall, so our *Justification*, in the whole progresse of it, depends upon Christs *Intercession.* As 3. More particularly our justification depends on it.

1. Our first *actuall* or *initiall Justification* (which is given us at our first conversion) depends upon *Christs Intercession*: Therefore in the forementioned prayer on the Crosse, the 1. The first act of our justification and our conversion depends upon it.

Sect. 5. thing he prayed for was *Forgiveneſſe*, *Father forgive them.* You heard before that Chriſts death affords the matter of our juſtification, as being *that* which is *imputed* the ranſome, the price, the thing it ſelfe that ſatisfies: And that his *Reſurrection* was the *originall act* of Gods juſtifying *us in Chriſt*; We were *virtually juſtifyed then* in Chriſt his being juſtifyed as in a *Common perſon.* But beſides all this, there is a *perſonall* or an *actuall Juſtification* to be beſtowed upon us, that is, an accounting and beſtowing it upon us in our own *perſons*; which is done when we beleeve, and it is called (*Rom.* 5.1.) *a being juſtified by faith*, and (*ver.* 10.) *receiving the atonement*: now this depends upon Chriſts *Interceſſion*; and it was typified out by *Moſes his ſprinkling the people with bloud*, mentioned *Heb.* 9.19. which thing Jeſus Chriſt as a *Mediator* and *Prieſt* doth now *from Heaven*; For *Heb.* 12. 24. it is ſaid, *You are come* to *Heaven*, *and to Jeſus the Mediator of the new Covenant*, *and* (as it is next ſubjoyned) *to the blood of ſprinklings*: he *ſhed* his *blood* on the *Croſſe* on earth, but he *ſprinkleth* it now as a Prieſt from *Heaven*: For it

it is upon *Mount Sion*, *to which* (he had said first in the former verse) *ye are come*; and so to *Christ* as a *Mediator* standing on that Mount, and *sprinkling from thence* his blood: and so therein there is an allusion unto *Moses*, Christs Type, who *sprink'ed* the people with the *blood* of that ceremoniall covenant, the type of the covenant of grace. Now in the 1 *Pet.* 1. 2. *The sprinkling of Christ his blood*, as it is there made the more proper work of Christ himselfe, in distinction from the other persons, (and therefore was done by *Moses*, who was his type) so is it also put for our *first justification*. And this *sprinkling* (as it is there mentioned) is from the vertue of his intercession: And therefore in that place of the *Heb.* forecited, he attributes an intercession unto it, as the phrase that follows, *which* [*speaks*] *better things*, *&c.* doth imply, of which more hereafter. Yet concerning this first Head let me adde this by way of caution, (which I shall presently have occasion to observe) that though this our first justification is to be ascribed to his *Intercession*, yet more eminently *Intercession* is ordained for the accomplish- Sect. 5.

ing

Sect. 5. our salvation, & this other more rarely in the Scripture attributed thereunto.

2. The continuance of our justification depends upon it.

Secondly, The *continuation* of our *Justification* depends upon it. And as his *Intercession* is the *virtuall continuation* of his Sacrifice; so is it the *continuing* cause of our *Justification*: which though it be an act done once, as fully as ever, yet is it done over every moment, for it is continued by acts of *free Grace*, and so renewed actually every moment. There is a *standing in Grace* by Christ, spoken of *Rom.* 5. 2. as well as a first *accesse by Christ*; and that *standing in grace*, and continuing in it, is afterwards, *ver.* 11. attributed to his *life*, that is, as it is interpreted *Heb.* 7. 25. his *living ever to intercede*. We owe our *standing* in grace every moment, to his *sitting* in Heaven, and interceding every moment; There is no fresh act of Justification goes forth, but there is a fresh act of Intercession. And as though God created the World once for all, yet every moment he is said to create, every new act of providence being a new creation; so likewise to justifie continually, through his continuing our free grace to justifie as at first;

and

and this Christ doth by continuing his Intercession: he continues *a Preest for ever*, and so we continue to be justified for ever. Sect. 5.

3. There is hereby *a full securicy given us of Justification to be continued for ever.* The *danger* either must lie in *old sinnes* comming into *remembrance*, or else from *sins newly* to be committed. Now first, God hereby takes order, that *no old sinnes shall come up into remembrance* to trouble his thoughts, (as in the old Law, after the Priests going into the Holy of holies, their sins are said yet to have done, *Heb.* 10. 3.) and to that end it was that he placed *Christ* as his *Remembrancer* for us, so neere him, to take up his thoughts so with his obedience, that our sinnes might not come into minde: not that God needed this help to put himselfe in mind, but only for a formality sake, that things being thus really carried between God and Christ for us, according to a way suiting with our apprehensions, our faith might be strengthened against all suppositions and feares of after reviving our guilts. Look therefore, as God ordained the *Rainbow* in the heavens, that when he looks

3. A full security of our justification given thereby for ever.
1. Against the remembrance of sinnes past.

Sect. 5. lookt on it, he might remember his Covenant, never to destroy the world againe by water; so he hath set Christ as the Rain-bow about his Throne. And look as the *Bread* and *Wine* in the Lords Supper are appointed on *earth* to *shew forth Christs death*, as a Remembrancer to us; so is *Christ himselfe* appointed in *heaven* to shew forth his death really, as a *Remembrancer* thereof to his Father; and indeed, the one is correspondent to the other: Onely the Papists have perverted the use of the Lords Supper, by making it on earth a *commemorative sacrifice* to *God*, when as it is but a *Remembrancer* thereof to *men*: and besides, their Priests therein doe take upon themselves this very office of presenting this sacrifice to God which is proper onely to Christ in Heaven; But God when he would make sure not to be tempted to remember *our sinnes any more*, nor trouble himselfe with them, hath set his Christ by him to put him in minde of his so pleasing an offering. So the High-priests going into the Holy of holies, was *for a memoriall*, and therein the Type of Christ. And this is plainly and expresly made the

use

use of this execution of his Priestly office in Heaven, *Heb.* 8. where the Apostle having discoursed of that *part* of his office (as the chiefe thing he aimed at in this Epistle, *ver.* 10. and of the necessity of it, *ver.* 3, 4, and 5. and *excelleney* of it, in this respect, *ver.* 6.) he then shews, how from thence the *new Covenant* of pardon came to be sure and stedfast, that *God will remember our sins no more, ver.* 12. which he there brings in as the proper use of this doctrine & part of his Priesthood. Sect. 5.

2. As by reason of Intercession, God remembers not old sinnes, so likewise *he is not provoked by new.* For though God when he justifies us, should forgive all old sins past for ever, so as never to remember them more, yet new ones would break forth, and he could not but take notice of them: and so, so long as *sin continues*, there is need of a *continuing intercession.* Therefore for the securing us in this, it is said, *Rom.* 5. 10. *That if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son; much more being reconciled, we shall be saved* [*by his life.*] where we see that his *death* is in some more speciall maner said to *procure reconciliation* at first for sins

2. To prevent the accusing and condemning us by *new sinnes* for times to come.

of

Sect. 5. lookt on it, he might remember his Covenant, never to destroy the world againe by water; so he hath set Christ as the Rain-bow about his Throne. And look as the *Bread* and *Wine* in the Lords Supper are appointed on *earth* to *shew forth Christs death*, as a Remembrancer to us; so is *Christ himselfe* appointed in *heaven* to shew forth his death really, as a *Remembrancer* thereof to his Father; and indeed, the one is correspondent to the other: Onely the Papists have perverted the use of the Lords Supper, by making it on earth a *commemorative sacrifice* to *God*, when as it is but a *Remembrancer* thereof to *men*: and besides, their Priests therein doe take upon themselves this very office of presenting this sacrifice to God which is proper onely to Christ in Heaven; But God when he would make sure not to be tempted to remember *our sinnes any more*, nor trouble himselfe with them, hath set his Christ by him to put him in minde of his so pleasing an offering. So the High-priests going into the Holy of holies, was *for a memoriall*, and therein the Type of Christ. And this is plainly and expresly made the

use

use of this execution of his Priestly office in Heaven, *Heb.* 8. where the Apostle having discoursed of that *part* of his office (as the chiefe thing he aimed at in this Epistle, *ver.* 10. and of the necessity of it, *ver.* 3, 4, and 5. and *excellency* of it, in this respect, *ver.* 6.) he then shews, how from thence the *new Covenant* of pardon came to be sure and stedfast, that *God will remember our sins no more, ver.* 12. which he there brings in as the proper use of this doctrine & part of his Priesthood. Sect. 5.

2. As by reason of Intercession, God remembers not old sinnes, so likewise *he is not provoked by new.* For though God when he justifies us, should forgive all old sins past for ever, so as never to remember them more, yet new ones would break forth, and he could not but take notice of them: and so, so long as *sin continues*, there is need of a *continuing intercession.* Therefore for the securing us in this, it is said, *Rom.* 5. 10. *That if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son; much more being reconciled, we shall be saved* [*by his life.*] where we see that his *death* is in some more special maner said to *procure reconciliation* at first for sins

2. To prevent the accusing and condemning us by *new sinnes* for times to come.

of

Sect. 5. of *unregeneracy*, and to bring us to Christ; but then his *life* and Intercession, or *living to intercede*, is said to *keep God and us friends*, that wee may never fall out more. What *Christ* did on *earth*, doth more especially procure *reconciliation* for *sinnes* which wee doe in the *state of nature*; so as notwithstanding them, God resolves to turn us from that state, and draw us to Christ: But sins which wee commit *after conversion* (though pardoned also by his death) yet the *pardon* of them is more especially attributed to his *life* and *intercession*, as a daily preservative, a continuall plaister (as some call it) to heale such sinnes. So that it would seeme, that God out of his eternall love doth bring us to Christ, and draws us to him through the beholding the reconciliation wrought by his death, and so gives us at first conversion, unto Christ; and we being brought to him, he sprinkles us with his blood; and then God sayes to him, Now doe you look to them, that they and I fall out no more. And to that end Christ takes our cause in hand by that eternall Priesthood of his; and from that time begins

Intercession principally intended for sinnes after conversion.

begins more eſpecially to intercede for us. And thus ſinnes after the ſtate of grace, may bee ſaid more eminently to bee taken away by that part of his Prieſthood, which he now in heaven performes. That place alſo, 1 *Joh.* 2. 1, 2. ſeemes to make this the great end of Interceſſion, [*If any man ſinne*, (that is, if any of the company of beleevers, to whom alone hee wrote) *we have an Advocate with the Father:*] ſo as Interceſſion principally ſerves for ſinnes to come, or committed after grace received. Thus alſo in his prayer, *Joh.* 17. which was left as a *patterne* of his Interceſſion in heaven, he prayes for his Elect as Beleevers, *I pray for them* [*that ſhall beleeve*] *through their word*: Not but that ſinnes after converſion are taken away by his death; and ſinnes before it, by his Interceſſion alſo: for Chriſt interceded for thoſe who crucified him, and by virtue of that Interceſſion thoſe three thouſand were converted, (as was obſerved.) But the meaning only is, that yet more eminently the worke of reconciliation for ſinnes before converſion, is attributed to his death; and for ſins after converſion, to his

Sect. 5.

In what ſenſe his *Death* doth more eminently prevaile for the pardon of ſinnes afore converſion, and his Interceſſion for ſinnes after.

Sect. 5. his Interceſſion: Even as the Perſons of the Trinity, though they have all a like hand in all the works of our ſalvation, yet we ſee that one part is attributed more to one Perſon, and another to another.

3. Sort of reaſons from Chriſt.

A third ſort of reaſons why God ordained this worke of *Interceſſion* to accompliſh our ſalvation by, doe reſpect *Chriſt* himſelfe, whoſe *honour* and glory, and the *perpetuation* of it in our hearts, God had as well in his eye in the ordering all the workings of our ſalvation, as *much* as his owne, *That all might honour the Sonne as well as the Father*, as Chriſt himſelf ſpeaks. Now therefore for the maintaining and upholding his glory, and the commings in thereof, did God ordain after all that he had done for us here below, this worke of Interceſſion in heaven, to be added to all the reſt, for the perfecting of our ſalvation. As

1. That none of Chriſts offices ſhould lye vacant.

Firſt, it became him, and was for his honour, that none of his offices ſhould be vacant or lye idle, and he want employment in them: All *offices* have *work* to accompany them; and all *work* hath *honour* (as its reward)

to

to arise out of it. And therefore when Sect. 5.
he had done all that was to be done on earth, as appertaining unto the *merit* of our salvation, he appoints this full and perpetuall work in heaven, for the applying and possessing us of salvation, and that as a Priest, by praying and interceding in the merit of that one oblation of himselfe. God would have Christ never to be out of office, nor out of work. And this very reason is more then intimated, *Heb.*7. 24,25. *This man, because he continueth ever, hath an unchangeable Priesthood,* (or, as *ver.*22. expounds it) *for ever.* And the work of his Priesthood is interpreted, *ver.* 25. to be *ever to make intercession.* The meaning is, that God would not have him continue to be a Priest in title onely, or in respect onely of a service past, and so to have onely the honour of Priesthood perpetuated to him out of the *remembrance* of what he *once had done*, (as great Generals have, even in time of peace, the glory of some great battail fought, continued to them in their titles, or rewards for ever:) But God would have him have, as the renowne of the old, so a perpetuall

spring

Sect. 5. ſpring of honour by new worke and employment in that office which he is continually a doing, ſo to preſerve the verdure of his glory ever freſh and green, and therefore ordained a continuall worke for him. And the ſumme of the Apoſtles reaſoning is this, That ſeeing *himſelfe* was to be *for ever*, ſo ſhould his *worke* and Prieſthood be, that ſo his honour might be for ever: So *ver.* 28. concludes it, *Conſecrated* or *perfected for evermore.*

2. That Chriſt might have a continuall hand in each, and every worke of our ſalvation to the laſt.

Secondly, for the ſame reaſon alſo, it became him that the whole work of our ſalvation firſt and laſt, every ſtep and degree of accompliſhment of it, ſhould be ſo ordered as he ſhould continue ſtill to have as great and continuall a hand in every part, even to the laying of the top ſtone thereof, as he had in laying the firſt foundation and corner ſtone thereof. And this you have expreſſed, *Heb.* 12. 2. *Looking to Jeſus the beginner* and *perfecter of our faith.* Two things had been ſaid of him, as two cauſes of two effects; and we muſt looke to him in both. 1. He is to be looked at as *Dying*, (*enduring the Croſſe*) as there he is ſet forth.

2. As

2. As *sitting at Gods right hand*, and *interceding*, (as that whole Epistle had represented him.) We are to look at these two as causes of a *double effect*: to looke at his *dying*, as that which is the *beginning of our faith*, (so according to the Greeke, and the margent of our translation) and at his *sitting at Gods right hand*, as an Intercessor, for the *finishing of our faith* thereby; and so of our finall salvation. For as *Christs work* began in his life & death, (which is put for all his obedience here below) so our *first believing* (as was said) begins by vertue of his *death* at first: and as his work *ends* in his *intercession*, and sitting at God his right hand; so answerably is our *faith* and *salvation perfected by it*, that thus he might be left out in nothing, but be the *Alpha* and *Omega*, *the Beginning and the Ending*, to whom be glory for *ever*. So that we are to look upon our Mediator, CHRIST, as doing as much *work* for us in *Heaven* at this instant, *as* ever he did on *Earth*: here *suffering*, but there *praying*, and *presenting* his sufferings. All his worke was not done, when he had done here: that work here was indeed the harder Sect. 5.

piece

Sect. 5. piece of the two, yet ſoon diſpatched; but his work in heaven, though ſweeter far, yet lies on his hands for ever: therefore let us leave out none of theſe in our believing on him.

Chap. IV.

The ſecond Head. *The great ſecurity the conſideration of Chriſts* Interceſſion *affords to faith for our* Juſtification, *ſhewed* 1. *By way way of* evidence. *By two things.*

And ſo I come (as in the former I have done) to ſhew what ſtrong grounds of *ſecurity* and *triumph* our faith may raiſe from this laſt act, namely, Chriſts Interceſſion for us, in the point of juſtification; *Who ſhall condemne? it is Chriſt that intercedes*: And this was the ſecond generall propounded; and therein to proceed alſo according to the Method taken up in the former.

1. What aſſurance by way of *evidence* this doth afford unto faith of *non-condemnation.*

2. What *powerfull* efficacy and *influence*

fluence this muſt be of, that *Chriſt intercedes.* Sect. 5.

First, to handle it by way of evidence. §. 1.

That Chriſt intercedes, is a ſtrong evidence to our faith by two demonſtrations. To evidence theſe two demonſtrations.

1. From the very intent and ſcope of the *work* of interceſſion it ſelfe, and what it is ordained by God to effect.

2. From the end of Jeſus Chriſt himſelfe, who *lives* in Heaven on purpoſe to *intercede for us.* Our ſalvation is both *Finis operis*, the end of the work, and *finis ipſius operantis*, in ſome reſpect the end of Chriſt himſelfe the interceder; and both theſe doe lay the greateſt engagement that can be upon Chriſt to accompliſh our ſalvation through his interceſſion.

1. For the work it ſelf; Interceſſion you have ſeene is a part of the office of Chriſts Prieſthood, as well as his dying, and offering himſelfe: now all the works of Chriſt are and muſt be perfect in their kind (even as Gods are, of which ſayes *Moſes*, *Deut.* 32. 4. *His work is perfect*) for otherwiſe he ſhould not be a perfect Prieſt. Now the perfection of every worke lies in order

Sect. 5. order to its end for which it is ordained; ſo as that work is perfect that attaines to ſuch an end as it is ordained for, and that imperfect which doth not. Now the immediate direct end of Chriſts Interceſſion, is the actuall ſalvation of Beleevers, Elect, and perſons whom he dyed for. The end of his death is *Adoptio juris*, purchaſing a right unto ſalvation; but of Interceſſion, *procuratio ipſius ſalutis*, the very ſaving us actually, and putting us in poſſeſſion of Heaven. To this purpoſe, obſerve how the Scripture ſpeaks concerning Chriſts death, *Heb.* 9. 12. *He entred into heaven, having obtained Redemption*, or *found* Redemption, that is, by way of right, by procuring full title to it. But of his Interceſſion, it ſayes (*Heb.* 7. 25.) that by it Chriſt is able *to ſave to the utmoſt them that come unto God by him*: that is, actually to ſave, and put them in poſſeſſion of happineſſe: that is made the end and ſcope of Interceſſion there; & that phraſe [εἰς τὸ παντελὲς] *to the utmoſt*, notes out a *ſaving indeed*, a doing it (not by halves, but) wholly, and throughly, and *compleatly*: εἰς τὸ παντελὲς is to ſave *altogether*, to give our

our salvation its *last* act and comple- Sect. 5.
ment, that is the true force of the phrase, even to *effect* it, to the last of it, all that is to be done about it. Thus also *Rom.* 5. 9, and 10. *We are justified by his death, but* [*saved*] (namely, compleatly) *by his life*, (that is,) his *living to intercede* So that the very salvation of Believers is it that is the work [the τὸ ἔργον] of Christs Intercession.

Now what security doth this afford? for to be *saved* is more then to be justified, for it is the actuall possessing us of heaven. So then, doe but grant that Christs *Intercession* is as perfect a work in its kind, as Christs death is in its kind; and you must needs be saved. The perfection of Christs death, and the work thereof, wherein lay it (as on Christs part to be performed) but in this, that he should lay down a Ransome sufficient to purchase salvation for such and such persons as God would save? and so the perfection of it lies in the worth and *sufficiency* of it, to that end it was ordained for; it being a perfect sacrifice in it selfe, *able* to purchase eternall redemption for us, and to make us *savable* against all sinnes, and the demerits

What security this affords.

Sect. 5. merits of them, and to give us *right* to Heaven: and had it wanted a grain of this, it had then been imperfect. Now then answerably, for intercession, the comfort of our soules is, that the proper work that lies upon Christ therein, is the compleat saving those very persons, and the *possessing* them of Heaven, this is the τὸ ἔργον, the proper work thereof. To outvie the demerits of our sinnes, was the perfection of his death; but to *save our souls* is the end and perfection of his Intercession; Our *sins* are the object of the one, and our *soules* of the other. To that end was intercession added to his death, that we might not have a *right* to Heaven in vain, of which we might be dispossessed. Now therefore upon this ground, if Christ should faile of our soules salvation, yea, but of any one degree of glory (purchased by his death to any soule) which that soule should want, this work of his would then want & fall short so much of its perfection. That place in *Heb.* 7. sayes not only that Christ will doe his utmost to save, but *save to the utmost.*

Object. You may say, My infidelity & obstinacy may hinder it, though Christ doth what in him lies. Well,

Well, but intercession undertakes the work absolutely: For Christ prays not conditionally in Heaven, *If men shall believe, &c.* as we doe here on earth; nor for propositions only, but for persons; and therefore he prayes to cure that very infidelity. Now as if a Physitian undertakes to cure a mad man (if he knows what he doth) he considers the madnesse of his Patient, and how he will teare off what is applyed, and refuse all Physick; he therefore resolves to deale with him accordingly, and so to order him as he shall not hinder that help which he is about to afford him; and so upon those tearms he undertakes the cure: even so doth Christ, when by intercession he undertakes to save us sinners; he considers us what we are, and how it is with us, what unbeliefe is in us, yet undertakes the matter; and so to save us is the scope and end of this his work, which if he should not accomplish, he after all this should not be a perfect Priest. It was the fault that God found with the *Old Priesthood*, that it *made nothing perfect*, *Heb.* 7. 19. and therefore *ver.* 12. the *Law was changed*, and the *Priesthood was changed* to-

Sect. 5. *Resp.*

For Christ otherwise should not be as perfect a Priest in interceding as he was in dying.

Sect. 5. together with it, (as there you have it.) Now in like manner Christs Priesthood should be imperfect, if it made not the Elect perfect, and then God must yet seek for another Covenant, and a more perfect Priest; for this would be found faulty, as the other was. So then our comfort is, if Christ approve himselfe to be a *perfect Priest*, we *who come to God by him* must be perfectly saved. It is in this office of his Priesthood, and all the parts of it, as in his Kingly office: The work of his Kingly office is to subdue all enemies, to the last man, even fully to doe the thing, and not onely to have power, and to goe about to doe it: so as if there should be any one enemy left unsubdued, then Christ should not be a perfect King. The same holds in his Priestly office also; he should not be a perfect Priest if but one soule of the elect, or those he intercedes for, were left unsaved. And this is indeed the top and highest consideration for our comfort in this argument, that Intercession leaves us not till it hath actually and compleatly saved us; and this is it that makes the Apostle put a further thing upon Intercession

tercession here in the Text, then upon that other his *sitting at Gods right hand.* So as we are in this respect as sure of attaining unto the utmost glory of our salvation, as Christ to have the full honour of his Priesthood. A man saved is more then justifyed; and Christ cannot reckon his work perfect, nor himselfe a perfect Priest, untill we are saved. *Who shall condemn? it is Christ that intercedes.* Sect. 5.

§. 2.

Besides, the consideration of the nature and scope of this *work it selfe,* which Christ upon his honour of acquiting himselfe as a *perfect Priest,* hath undertaken; There is in the second place a farther consideration that argues him engaged by a stronger obligation, even the losse of his owne honour, his office and all, if he should not effect salvation for those that come to God by him; so much doth it concerne him to effect it. Of all the works that ever he did, he is most engaged in this; it will not onely be *the losse of a businesse* which concerns him, and of so much work, but *himselfe* must be *lost* in it too: And the reason is, because that he intercedes as a *Surety.* He was not onely a *Surety on earth* in

2. Demonstration: It is one end of Christs life in Heaven.

His honour engaged to effect.

Sect. 5. dying, (and so was to look to do that work througly, and to be sure to lay down a price sufficient, or else himselfe had gone for it: he pawned in that work, not onely his honour, but even his life and soule to effect it, or lose himselfe in it) but he is a *Surety* now also in heaven *by interceding*. This you may find to be the scope of *Heb.7.* 22. by observing the coherence of that 22. *ver.* (wherein he is called a *Surety*) with *ver.* 23, 24, 25. that title and appellation is there given him, in relation unto this part of his office especially. And although it holds true of all parts of his office whatsoever, yet the coherence carries it, that *that* mention there of his being a *Surety*, doth in a more speciall manner refer unto his Intercession, as appeares both by the words before and after: In the words before, (*ver.* 21.) the Apostle speaks of this his *Priest-hood which is for ever*; and then subjoynes, (*ver.* 22.) *By so much was Jesus made a Surety of a better Testament*: and then after also he discourseth of, and instanceth in his Intercession, and his continuing a Priest for ever in that work: So *ver.* 23, 24, 25. *Wherefore he is able to save to the*

That Christ is a *Surety* as well by *interceding* as by *dying*.

the utmost, seeing he ever lives to make intercession: Yea, he is therefore engaged to save to the utmost, because even in *interceding* (for which he is said there to live) he is a Surety. Sect. 5.

He was a Surety on earth, and is a Surety still in heaven; onely with this double difference, which ariseth first from the different things which he undertook for then, whilst on earth, and for which now he undertakes in heaven: That on earth he was a Surety to *pay a price* so sufficient, as should satisfie Gods justice; which having paid, he was discharged (in that respect, and so far) of that Obligation, and his Bond for that was cancelled; but so as still he remaines a Surety, bound in another obligation as great, even for the bringing to salvation those whom he dyed for; for their persons remained still unsaved, though the debt was then paid; and till they be saved, he is not quit of this Surety-ship and engagement. And secondly, these two Surety-ships doe differ also by the differing *Pawns* which he was engaged to forfeit by failing in either of these works: for the payment of our debt, his *soule* it selfe lay at The difference of these two Surety-ships.

Sect. 5. the ſtake, which he offered up for ſin; but for the ſaving of the perſons, all his honour in heaven lies at ſtake: *He lives to intercede*, he poſſeſſeth Heaven upon theſe tearms, and it is one end of his life; ſo that as he muſt have ſunk under Gods wrath, if he had not paid the debt, (his ſoule ſtanding in our ſoules ſtead) ſo he muſt yet quit heaven, and give over living there, if he brings us not thither. It is true, he intercedes not as a *Common perſon*, (which relation in all other forementioned acts he ſtill bore; thus in his death he was both a Common perſon, and a Surety repreſenting us, ſo as we died in him; ſo likewiſe in his Reſurrection we aroſe with him, and in his Aſcenſion we aſcended, &c. but yet he intercedes not under that relation, namely, not as a Common perſon;) for we muſt not, cannot be ſaid to intercede in him, for this laſt work lay not upon us to doe. He doth it wholly for us indeed, but not in our ſtead, or as that which we ſhould have done, though on our behalfe; for it being the laſt, the crowne of all his works of mediation, is therefore proper to him as Mediator, and his ſole work,

work as such. Thus in like manner the first work of Incarnation, and answerably the last of Intercession, in neither of these was Christ a Common person representing others, though a common Saviour of others in these; for the one was the foundation of all, the other the accomplishment of all, and so proper onely to himselfe, as Mediator. But although he intercedes not as a Common person, as representing us in what we were to have done for our selves, yet so as that other relation of a *Surety* is continued still in that work; he stands engaged therein as an Undertaker for us, and so as a *Surety intercedes*: Such as *Judah* was for *Benjamin*, *Gen.* 43. 9. *I will be surety for him; of my hand shalt thou require him: if I bring him not unto thee, and set him before thee, then let me bear the blame for ever*: So layes Christ for us. And therefore *Sponsio*, or *undertaking* for us, is by *Divines* made a great part of this his office. Now the consideration of this may the more secure us; for the more peculiarly and solely it is his work, the more his honour lies at stake, and the more he will set himSect. 5.

Sect. 5. himselfe to effect it; yea, and being by way of *Suretiship*, it concerns him yet more neerly; for he hath engaged, (and if he should faile) might even loose that honour which he hath now in heaven.

CHAP. V.

The prevalency *of Christs Intercession, and the powerfull* influence *it hath into our salvation: Demonstrated first, from the* greatnesse *of Christ, and his favour with God.*

THus we have heard what matter of support to our faith (by way of *evidence*) this must needs afford, that Christ *intercedes*. Let us consider now, what further assurance will arise to our faith, from the *influence* which Christs Intercession must needs have, to effect and carry on our salvation to an assured issue. The work of Intercession being effectually to procure our salvation, and to continue the pardon of our sins, and hold us in favour with God, therefore the *influence*

The prevalency of Christs Intercession, and the *influence* of it into our Justification.

ence and energie it hath herein, muſt needs lie in that *potency* and *prevalency* which this interceſſion of Chriſt hath with God, to obtain any thing at his hands for us, and ſo to continue his favour towards us. Now to raiſe up our apprehenſions, how potent and prevalent this Interceſſion of Chriſt muſt needs be, let us conſider both the *Perſon interceding*, namely, *Chriſt*; and the *Perſon with whom* Chriſt intercedes for this favour, which is *God*; the one the Sonne, the other the Father; and ſo the *greatneſſe* of Chriſt with *God*, and the *graciouſneſſe* of God to *Chriſt*, together with the one-neſſe of wills, and unity of affections in them both: So that Chriſt will be ſure to aske nothing which his Father will deny; and his Father will not deny any thing which he ſhall aske. Sect. 5. Demonſtrated.

Now firſt for the *greatneſſe* of Chriſt the Interceſſor, that is, his *greatneſſe with God* the Father. This is often urged in this Epiſtle to the *Hebrews*, to perſwade confidence in us, in this very point in hand: thus *Heb.* 4. 14, 16. *Seeing we have a* [*great*] *High-prieſt, let us come boldly*: And 1. From the greatneſſe of Chriſts perſon, and his intereſt in God who intercedes.

Sect. 5. And whilſt *Great* and *Prieſt* are thus joyned together, the more comfort and boldneſſe we may have, the greater he is: For he is a *Prieſt* in relation to his dealing with God for our pardon; as he is a Prieſt, he deales in nothing elſe; and the greater the perſon is who uſeth his intereſt herein, the better, the ſooner he will prevail. And he is there ſaid to be *Great*, becauſe great with God, in prevailing with him; and indeed ſo great, as it is impoſſible but he ſhould prevaile. It was the greatnes of his perſon which did and doth put ſuch an influence into his death, that it was (as you heard) a *price*, more then enough, to ſatisfie Juſtice, even to overflowing: And therefore *Who ſhall condemne? It is Chriſt that dyed.* And the greatneſſe of his perſon muſt needs have as much influence to make Interceſſion prevalent. In a matter of interceſſion, the perſon that intercedes prevailes more then any other conſideration whatſoever. We ſee what great friends doe procure oftentimes with but a word ſpeaking, even that which money, no nor any thing elſe could have obtained. Now Chriſt muſt needs be

be great with God, in many respects. Sect. 5.

Demonstrated by three things:

First, in respect of the neerneſſe of his alliance to him, He is the *naturall* Son of God, God of God, and therefore certaine to prevaile with him. This is diligently ſtill put in, almoſt in all places, where this part of his Prieſthood (his Interceſſion) is mentioned, in the Epiſtle to the *Heb.* So in the 4. of the ſame Epiſtle, *ver.* 14. *We have a great High-prieſt entred into the heavens, Jeſus,* [*the Son of God.*] So *Heb.* 7. 25. and 28. *ver.* compared, the Apoſtle having ſaid, *ver.* 25. that *He is able to ſave to the utmoſt, ſeeing he ever lives to make Interceſſion*; he doth *ver.* 28. devolve this ability of his to ſave (ultimately) upon his being the *Sonne*: this in the 28. *verſe*, in the end of that diſcourſe, this is made as the Baſis of all; [*The Law* (ſaith he) *makes men High-prieſts which have infirmity*] (which infirmity or diſability of theirs is mentioned in oppoſition unto what he had juſt before ſpoken of the great *ability* of this our High-prieſt in his interceding, *ver.* 25. in thoſe words, *He is* [*able*] *to ſave to the utmoſt.*) Thoſe Prieſts whom the ceremoniall Law

1. The neerneſſe of his alliance, that he is *Gods naturall Son.*

Sect. 5. Law made, (*Aaron* and his sonnes) are unable to save, they have infirmity: Now what is it in him that makes this difference, and him so able above what they were? *The word of the Oath makes the* [*Son*] (sayes he) *who is perfected* (as you have it in the Greeke, and margent) *for evermore.* He mentions this his Son-ship principally in relation to his Intercession, which there he had discourſed of. Intercession is a carrying on our salvation in a way of grace and favour, as his *death* was by way of *satisfaction.* And answerably it may be observed in the Scripture, that as the *all-sufficiency* of the *satisfaction* of his *death*, is still put upon his being *God*; and so upon the *greatnesse of his Person* considered in respect of his *nature* or *essence*, namely, his *God-head*: So in like manner, that the *prevalency* of his *Intercession* is founded upon the *nearnesse* of his *relation* unto God, his *alliance* to him, and the *being* his *Sonne.* Thus for the first. When *Redemption* is spoken of, the *sufficiency* of the *price* is eminently put upon his *God-head*, [*The blood of God*] Thus also *Heb.* 9. where when he had (*ver.* 12.) shewn how Christ had purchaſed

How great an influence this hath into Intercession to make it prevalent.

chaſed and obtained a *perfect redemption*, he then argues the ſufficiency of it from his *Godhead*, *ver.* 13,14. *For if the bloud of Bulls and of Goats, and the aſhes of an Heifer, ſprinkling the uncleen, ſanctifieth to the puritying of the flesh: How much more ſhall the bloud of Christ, who [through the eternall ſpirit] offered himſelfe, &c.* The *eternall ſpirit* is his *Godhead*. Thus anſwerably when he ſpeaks of the prevailing of his Interceſſion in Heaven, he puts it upon his *Sonne-ſhip*, [*Jeſus the Sonne,*] he mentions the neerneſſe of the relation of his perſon to God, as being that which draws with that great reſpect of favour and grace, he being by this great with God, as great in himſelfe. All matters of Interceſſion are carried, we know, by way of favour: And therefore looke how prevalent in a way of merit, his being *God* makes his *death* in its kinde; no leſſe prevalent doth his being the *Sonne of God*, make his *Interceſſion* in its kinde, namely, in a way of obtaining grace and mercy: yea, ſo prevalent of it ſelfe it is, that we might build upon it alone, even as much as upon his death. And indeed, Sect. 5.

Chriſt

Sect. 5. Christ intercedes not only in the vertue and strength of his satisfaction, (though in that also) and of his obedience to his Father; but also in the strength of his relation as *a Sonne* who pleads his own grace and interest in God, as he is his Sonne; which is a consideration that doth alwaies *actually* exist and abide: Whereas his obedience (though perfect) was but once *offred up*, and its existence is but *virtuall*; but he continues *a Sonne for ever*, not virtually only, but actually. And therefore it is added in that seventh to the *Hebrews*, *ver last*, that the *Gospell ordained the Sonne* [*perfected for ever.*] The meaning whereof is, that he is not only a Priest perfected in the time past by that perfect offering once made; but in that he is the Son, he remaines a *perfect Priest for ever*, for time to come: whom therefore no imperfection in his office, no failing or missing of his suits can befall. So as if it could be supposed that his obedience (because past so long agoe) might be forgotten; yet never this, that he is a *Sonne*: That for ever abides, and of it selfe were enough to prevaile. And how effectuall must the inter-

intercession of such a Sonne be, Sect. 5.
who is so great a Sonne of so great a Father, equall with him, and the expresse Image of his person? never any Sonne so like, and in so peculiarly a transcendent manner a Sonne, as the relation of Sonne-ship among men is but a shadow of it! Christ is *one* with his Father, as himselfe often speakes; and therefore if his Father should deny him any thing, he should then cease to be one with him, he must then *deny himselfe*, which God can never doe. He is in this respect [*the Beloved*] as he is called, *Ephes.* 1. 6. as on whom (originally and primarily) all the beames of Gods love doe fall. *Solomon* (the Type of Christ) was *the beloved of God*, 2 *Sam.* 12. 24. and had his name from thence, (namely) *Jedidiah*, that is, *beloved of the Lord*: And to shew how beloved he was, God, when he came first to his kingdome, bade him *ask what he should give him*, 1 *Kings*, 3. 5. Now the like God sayes to Christ when come first to his Kingdome also, *Psal.* 2. 8. *Ask of me, and I will give thee*; namely, when *he had set him as King on his holy hill*, *ver.* 6. And of him he sayes, *This is my well-beloved*

Sonne

Sect. 5. *Sonne in whom I am well pleased, heare him.* God bids us therefore and upon that respect to *heare him*; and that speech was but the echo of his owne heart, in that he himselfe is so well pleased with him for this, that he is his Sonne, as he himselfe will heare him in every thing; yea, and is so pleased with him, as that although Christ had never dyed, nor obeyed the Law; yet simply, because he is his Sonne; he hath so full an acquiescencie of all desires in him, and complacencie of delights, that he could deny him nothing. How prevalent then must Christs intercession needes be, though there were nothing else to be considered?

That God had this consideration of his being his *Sonne*, when he ordained him a *Priest* to intercede, as that which would fit him for this work.

And that God had indeed this as one maine consideration, upon which he made him a Priest thus to intercede, those words doe testifie, *Heb.* 5. 5, and 6. *He that said unto him, Thou art my Sonne, this day have I begotten thee; As he saith also in another place, Thou art a Priest for ever, after the order of Melchisedech*: These latter words are not onely a Paraphrase (as some thinke) meerly to shew that

[*He*]

[*He*] *that ſaid*, *Chriſt was his Sonne*, Sect. 5.
ſaid alſo, *He was a Prieſt*; but it is to ſhew the foundation of his call to that office. The great conſideration that fitted him for it, was, that he was Gods Sonne; eſpecially that fitted him for that part of his Prieſt-hood which was to remaine *for ever*, (of which that 110. *Pſal.* and the Epiſtle to the *Heb.* do eſpecially ſpeak.) Neither is the meaning of the fore-cited place onely to ſhew, that in that he was Gods Sonne, it was his birth-right to be a Prieſt; ſo as if God would have any Prieſt at all, it muſt be he; and ſo upon that conſideration, he that ſaid to him, *Thou art my Sonne*, ſaid, *Thou art a Prieſt*; and that being his right, he therefore called him to it, becauſe he was *his Sonne*, (for according to the Law of Nature, the eldeſt in the family was to be Prieſt; and ſo Chriſt, even as God-man, being *the firſt-borne of every creature*, and the naturall firſt-begotten Sonne of God, had right to be the prime leader of that great *Chorus* in that eternall worſhip in heaven:) That (I ſay) is not all the meaning of thoſe words, nor all that God con-

Sect. 5. considered in it, when he thus ordained him to be a Priest; but he had a further and more peculiar respect unto this especiall part of his Priesthood, his *Intercession*, (as that clause *for ever* imports) as that which, he being his naturall Son, so neerly allied to him, would transcendently fit him, and give such an omnipotent prevalency and effectualnesse to his requests, that he would be the most absolute perfect Priest for ever, (in this respect) that could be: That as God himselfe is perfect, and his power irresistable, so his Priesthood through this relation might be perfect also, and his requests undeniable. Thus did God order it to strenghthen our faith. And that indeed God did consider this relation of his to him to this very end, is evident by that of the 2. *Psal.* (out of which that saying [*Thou art my Son*] is cited) *ver.*7, and 8. *Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee*: and what followes? *Ask of me, and I will give thee, &c.* He connects both these together, namely, Intercession (that part of his Priestly office of asking) with his Son-ship, for that is it which moveth God to grant all that he asks. God loves

loves Christ as he loves himselfe, and Sect. 5.
therefore can deny him nothing, as he cannot deny himselfe. And so by the way, this cleares the ground of the Apostles quoting those words of the 2. *Psal.* in the 5. to the *Hebrews*, as a proofe of Christs call to the Priesthood, which Interpreters have been troubled how to make out; for (as you have seen) that speech [*Thou art my Son, ask, &c.*] is all one as if he had said, *Thou art a Priest*; and so was as fit and full a place to prove his being a Priest in the holy Ghosts intent, as is that other quoted with it, out of the 110. *Psal.* though uttered in more expresse words, *Thou art a Priest for ever*: Both speeches come to one, in both places; the holy Ghost especially aiming in both, at that part of his Priesthood in heaven, his Intercession; in the one speaking of him *after he is set upon Gods hill*, as *King*; (So *Psal.* 2. *ver.* 6.) and in the other, *after he is set down at Gods right hand*; (So *Psal.* 110. *ver.* 1, 2.) Yea, and this his favour with his Father, and Intercession alone, might have procured pardon for us sinners, but that Gods will was to have Justice satisfied.

And

Sect. 5. And ſecondly, he intercedes not onely as a Sonne, (and in that reſpect a Prieſt perfect enough for ever) but alſo as a *Sonne* who hath beene *obedient* to his Father, and hath done at his requeſt, and for his ſake, the greateſt ſervice for him, and the moſt willingly that ever was done: And you all know how much former ſervices done, doe alwayes forward ſuits. In the 5. of the *Heb. ver.* 8, 9, 10. it is ſaid, that *though he were a Sonne, yet learned he obedience*, and thereby *became perfect*. The Apoſtle had ſaid in the verſes before, that in reſpect of his being his Sonne, God had called him to this office, as one that was thereby ſufficiently qualified to be a Prieſt that might prevaile; and yet in theſe verſes he further addes, that though he was a Sonne, (and in that reſpect a Prieſt perfect enough) yet he was to be *obedient* alſo, and thereby yet to become in a further reſpect a perfect High-Prieſt alſo, even in reſpect of ſervice done, and obedience performed. And ſo ſhews that he comes to have a further perfection and power of prevailing in his Prieſtly office added to that rela-

2 His potency with God from his having been ſo *obedient a Sonne.*

tion

tion of Sonne-ſhip, ſpoken of *ver.* 5. Sect. 5.
And therefore it follows, that he *being thus become perfect*, namely, through his obedience, *he became Author of eternall ſalvation unto all them that obey him, called of God an High-prieſt for ever, &c.* That therefore which makes him yet more potent, (that he may be ſure to prevaile) is his obedience, and ſervice done; and this alone alſo were enough to carry any thing. And both theſe conſiderations of his Sonne-ſhip and Obedience, as giving an efficacy to his Interceſſion, you have alſo in that *Heb.* 7. from *ver.* 26. to 28. he had ſpoken of the power of Interceſſion, *ver.* 24, 25. how he was *able to ſave to the utmoſt*; and then in the following *verſes* he ſhews the ground of it, firſt in his fore-paſt *obedience*, *ver.* 26. 1. *Active*, *For ſuch an High-prieſt became us, who was* [*holy, harmleſſe, undefiled.*] And ſuch a Prieſt he was, and therefore able thus to ſave by his Interceſſion: For ſuch an one who was holy, harmleſſe, and no guile found in *his mouth*, what requeſts come out of ſuch lips, muſt needs be accepted. Then, Secondly, he mentions his

Paſſive

Sect. 5. *Passive obedience*, *ver.* 27. *He offered up himselfe once*, and thereby made so full a satisfaction, as he needed not to doe it but once; and in the strength of both these he intercedes: for to that purpose doth the mention of both these there come in. And then he addes that other which we before insisted on, that he is *the Sonne*, which follows in the next words, *ver.* 21. And accordingly you shall finde Christ himselfe urging this his obedience, as the foundation of all those his suits and requests for us that follow after. So in that last prayer, *John* 17. (which is as it were a pattern or instance of his Intercession for us in Heaven) *I have glorified thee on earth, I have finished the work thou gavest me*, *ver.* 4. And whereas two things may be distinctly considered in that his obedience: 1. The *worth* of it, as a *price* in the valuation of *Justice* it selfe: 2. The *desert* of *favour* and grace with God; which such an obedience and service done for his sake, might in a way of kindnesse expect to finde at his hands: you may for your comfort consider, that besides what the worth of it as a *price*, wch I shall urge in the next *chap.* might

Two things to be distinctly considered in his obedience, and both making it prevalent with God.

might exact of Justice it selfe be- Sect. 5.
tweene two strangers (as we use to say) he having well paid for all that he asks; he hath moreover deserved thus much grace and favour with his Father, in that this obedience was done for his sake and at his request; and this it calls for even in way of remuneration and requitall as of one kndenesse with the like: That therefore his Father should heare him in all the requests that ever he should make, yea so transcendent was the obedience which he did to his Father, in giving himselfe to death at his request, (and it was done at Gods sole entreaty, *Loe I come to doe thy will*) as he can never out-aske the merit of this his service. And (which may yet further encourage us herein) hee hath nothing at all left to aske for himselfe simply, for he hath need of nothing. So that all his favour remaines entire, for to be laid forth for sinners, and employed for them: and then adde this thereto, that all he can aske for them, is lesse, yea farre lesse then the service hee hath done to God

Sect. 5. comes to; our lives, and pardon, and ſalvation, theſe are not enough; they are too ſmall a requitall. So that beſides his *naturall* grace, and intereſt which he hath with his Father, as he is his ſonne, (which can never bee leſſened) this his *acquired* favour by his *obedience* muſt needs make him prevail, ſeeing it can never be requited to the full. Some Divines put ſo much efficacie in this, that they ſay, Chriſts very being in Heaven, who once did this ſervice, and ſo putting God in minde of it by his very preſence, is all that interceſſion, that the Scripture ſpeakes of, ſo ſufficient they thinke this alone to be.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Secondly, the Prevalencie *of Christs Intercession, demonstrated from the* righteousnesse *of the cause hee pleads even in* Justice: *How forcible the* cry *of his* blood *is, himself* appearing *to* intercede *with it.*

BEsides favour and grace in all these respects, he can and doth plead *Justice* and *Righteousnesse*, and is able so to carry it: so you have it, 1 *John* 2. 1. and 2. *ver. We have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ* [*the righteous.*] An Advocate hath place onely in a cause of Justice, and this Christs Advocateship is executed by pleading his owne satisfaction: so it followes, *Who is a propitiation for our sinnes*; and can plead his owne righteousnesse so farre, that Justice it selfe shall bee faine to save the worst of sinners. He can turne Justice it selfe for them, and handle matters so, as Justice shall be as forward to save them as any other Attribute. So that if God be said to be *righte-* 2.

Sect. 5. *ous in forgiving us our ſins, if wee doe but confeſſe them,* (as *Chap.* 1. of this 1 *Epiſt.* of *John, ver.*9.) then much more when *Jeſus Chriſt the righteous* ſhall intercede for the pardon of them, as he adds in the ſecond *ver.* of the enſuing *Chap.* and this if he will be *juſt.* The worſt Caſe hee will make a good one; not with colouring it over, (as cunning Lawyers do) or extenuating things; but with pleading that righteouſneſſe, which being put into the oppoſite ballance, ſhall caſt it for thee, be there never ſo many ſins weighed againſt it: Yea, and hee will be juſt in it too, and carry all by meere righteouſneſſe and equity.

This explicated.

In the explication of this Branch, my purpoſe is not to inſiſt upon the demonſtration of that *all-ſufficient fulneſſe* that is in Chriſts ſatisfaction, ſuch as may in juſtice procure our pardon and ſalvation, (becauſe it will more fitly belong to another Diſcourſe) but I ſhall abſolve this point in hand by two things which are proper to this head of *Interceſſion.*

First,

Sect. 5.

By two considerations.

First, by shewing how that there is even in respect to Gods Justice a powerfull *voice* of *Intercession* attributed unto Christs *bloud*, and how prevalent that must needs be in the ears of the righteous God.

Secondly, especially when Christ himselfe shall joyne with that cry and *Intercession* of his bloud, himself in Heaven appearing and interceding in the strength of it.

1. How Intercession and appeale to Gods justice is attributed to Christs bloud.

For the first, the Apostle *Heb.* 12.24. doth ascribe a voice, an appeale, an *Intercession* unto the bloud of Christ in Heaven. *The bloud of sprinkling* (sayes he) [*speakes*] *better things then the blood of Abel.* Hee makes Christs very blood and Advocate to *speake* for us, though Christ himselfe were silent; as hee sayes in another case, *Abel, though dead, yet speaketh*, *Heb.* 11.4. Many other things are said to *cry* in Scripture, (and I might shew how the cry of all other things doe meet in this) but Bloud hath the loudest cry of all things else, in the eares of the Lord of Hosts, the *Judge* of all the world, as he is in the 23. *vers.* of that 12. *Chap.* styled. Neither

Sect. 5. hath any *cry* the eare of Gods justice more then that of *blood*; *The voyce of thy brothers blood* (sayes God to *Cain*) *cryes unto me from the ground*, Genesis 4. 10. Now in that speech of the Apostle forecited, is the allusion made unto the blood of *Abel*, and the cry thereof: And hee illustrates the cry of Christs bloud *for us*, by the cry of that bloud of *Abel against Cain*, it *speakes better things then the blood of Abel*: And his scope therein is by an *Antithesis* or way of opposition, to shew, that Christs blood calls for *greater good* things to bee bestowed on us for whom it was shed, then *Abels* blood did for evill things, and vengeance against *Cain*, by whom it was shed. For looke how loud the blood of one innocent cryes for justice against another that murdered him; so loud will the blood of one righteous (who by the appointment and permission of a supreme Judge, hath been condemned for another) cry for his release and non-condemnation, for whom hee dyed: & the more righteous he was,

who

who laid downe his life for another, the louder ſtill is that cry, for it is made in the ſtrength of all that worth which was in him, whoſe blood was ſhed. Now to ſet forth the power of this cry of Chriſts blood with juſtice, let us compare it with that cry of *Abels* bloud in theſe two things, wherein it will be found infinitely to exceed it in force and loudneſſe. Sect. 5.

This cry of his blood, illuſtrated by a two-fold compariſon, with the cry of the blood of Abel, in all which it exceeds it.

Firſt, even the blood of the wickedeſt man on earth, if innocently ſhed, doth cry, and hath a power with Juſtice againſt him who murdered him. Had *Abel* murdered *Cain*, *Cains* blood would have cryed and called upon Gods Juſtice againſt *Abel* but [*Abels blood*] (there is an emphaſis in that) *Abels* who was a Saint, and the firſt Martyr in Gods Kalender; and ſo his blood cryes according to the worth that was in him. Now *precious in the ſight of the Lord is the death of his Saints*; and the blood of one of them cryes louder then the blood of all Man-kinde beſides. Now from this I argue, If the blood of a

Sect. 5. Saint cryes ſo, what muſt the blood of the *King of Saints* (as Chriſt is called, *Rev.* 15.) then doe? If the blood of one member of Chriſts body, what will then the blood of the head, farre more worth then that whole body? how doth it fill Heaven and Earth with out-cries, untill the promiſed intent of its ſhedding be accompliſht? And (as the Antitheſis carries it) look how the blood of *Abel* cryed for the ruine and condemnation of his brother *Cain*, ſo does Chriſts blood on the contrary for our pardon and non-condemnation; and ſo much the lowder, by how much his blood was of more worth then *Abels* was. This was the *blood of God*; ſo *Acts* 20. *Who therefore ſhall condemne?*

But ſecondly *Chriſts* blood hath in its cry here a further advantage of *Abels blood* attributed to it; For that cryed but from earth, *from the ground* where it lay ſhed, and that but for an anſwerable earthly puniſhment on *Cain*, as he was a man upon the earth, but Chriſts blood is carried up to Heaven; for as the High Prieſt carried

carried the blood of the Sacrifices into the Holy of Holies, so hath Christ virtually carried his blood into Heaven, *Heb.* 9.12. And this is intimated in this place also, as by the coherence will appeare. For all the other particulars, (of which this is one) whereto hee sayes the Saints are come, they are all in Heaven: *You are come* (sayes he, Verse 22.) *to the City of the living God, the Heavenly Hierusalem, and to an innumerable company of Angels, to the Church of the first born who are written in Heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect:* All which things are in Heaven, neither names he any other then such: And then adds [*And to the blood of sprinkling which speakes, &c.*] as a thing both speaking in Heaven, and besprinkled from Heaven, yea, wherewith Heaven is all besprinkled, as the Mercie-seat in the Holy of holies was, because sinners are to come thither. This blood therefore cries from Heaven, it is next unto God who sits Judge there, it cries in his very eares; whereas the cry of blood Sect. 9.

Sect. 5. from the ground is further off, and so though the cry thereof may come up to Heaven, yet the blood it selfe comes not up thither, as Christs already is. *Abels* blood cryed for vengeance to come downe from Heaven, but Christs blood cries us up into Heaven: like to that voice *Rev.* 11. 12. [*Come up hither:*] So *John* 17. 24. *Where I am, let them be,* for whom this blood was shed.

An explication in what sense Christs blood is said to cry.

But though this speaking, this voice, and intercession, be attributed to his blood, yet it is but in a Metaphorical and improper (though reall) sense: as also that this blood is in Heaven, is spoken, though in a reall, yet not in a proper sense. Some Divines of all sides, both Popish and Protestant, would make the whole work of Intercession, to be onely Metaphorical. It is true indeed, the voice and intercession of his blood apart considered, is but Metaphorical, (I grant) and yet reall; such a voice as those groanes are that are attributed to the *whole creation*, *Rom.* 8. 22. But Intercession as an act of Christ himselfe, joyned with this voice of his

his blood, is most properly and truely such. Sect. 5.

Therefore in the second place, adde to this Christs owne intercession also, which was the second thing propounded, that Christ by his owne Prayers seconds this cry of his blood: that not only the blood of Christ doth cry, but that Christ himselfe being alive doth joyne with it: how forcible and prevalent must all this bee supposed to bee? The blood of a man slaine doth cry, though the man remaine dead; even as of *Abel* it is said, (though to another purpose) *that being dead he yet speaketh*, *Heb.* 11. but Christ liveth and appeareth: *Vivit, & in cœlum cœlorum venit*; He follows the suit, pursues the hue and cry of his blood himselfe. His being alive, puts a life into his death. It is not in this as it was in that other, the first *Adams* sinne and disobedience. *Adam* although he himselfe had been annihilated when he died, yet he having set the stocke of our nature a going in propagation of Children, his sinne would have defiled and

2. Consideration; Christ himselfe living and joyning with the cry of his blood how prevalent it must needs be.

Sect. 5. condemned them to the end of the world, and the force of it to condemne is neither furthered nor leſſened by his ſubſiſting and being, or his not being: it receives no aſſiſtance from his perſonall life, one way or other. And the reaſon is, becauſe his ſinne condemnes us in a naturall and neceſſary way: But the death of Chriſt and his blood ſhed, theſe ſaving us in a way of grace and favour unto Chriſt himſelfe and for his ſake, that very being alive of Chriſt, that ſhed this blood, adds an infinite acceptation to it with God, moves him the more to heare the cry of it, and to regard it. In a matter of favour to be done for the ſake of another man, or in a ſuit, or matter of juſtice that concerns another, who is intereſted in it, that mans being *in vivis*, his being alive, puts a life into the cauſe. If *David* would have reſpect to *Ionathan* (when dead) in his children, he would much more if himſelfe had been alive. God made a Covenant with *Abraham*, *Iſaac*, and *Iacob*, to remember their ſeed after them; And why? They are alive,

alive, and were to live for ever; Sect. 5.
and though dead, shall rise againe. So Christ reasoneth from it, *Matth.* 22. 32. *I am the God of* Abraham, Isaac, *and* Jacob : *God is the God of the living,* (sayes he) *and not of the dead*: and so, *though* Abraham *be ignorant of his children* (as the Prophet speaks) and should not intercede for them, yet because *Abrahams* soul lives, and is not extinct, (as the Sadduces thought) but shall live againe at the Resurrection; therfore God remembers and respects his covenant with them; for he is a God of the living, and so his Covenant holds with them whilst they live. The old covenant of the first Testament ran in the names of *Abraham, Isaac,* and *Jacob,* [*The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob*] but this new covenant runnes in the name of Christ, *The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ*; so *Eph.* 1. 3. and so he becomes our God and our Father in him. And God being thus our Father, because Christs Father, and Christ (in whose name the Covenant runs) being alive, and God by Covenant the God of a living, not

of

Sect. 5. of a dead Christ; This therefore works effectually with him to respect his blood & hear the cry of it; and this, though Christ were absent, much more then when he is present also, and on purpose *appeareth in the presence of God for us*; as it is *Heb.* 9. 24. He is alive, and so, able to follow his own suit, and will be sure to see to it, and to second the cry of his blood, if it should not be heard.

To illustrate this by the helpe of the former comparison begun; If as *Abels* blood cries, so also it proves that *Abels* soule lives to cry; that both his cause cries and himselfe lives to follow it: So that the cry of *Abels* blood is seconded with the cry of *Abels* soule that lives, how doubly forcible must this needs be? And thus indeed you have it, *Rev.* 6. 9. where it is said that [*the soules*] *of them which were slaine for the testimony which they held*, [*cryed*] *with a loud voyce, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not avenge our blood?* Yea, see that not onely their blood cries, but their soules live, and live to cry. And it is not spoken Metaphorically of their soules,

soules, but what is truely done by them now in heaven, it being mentioned to shew how and by what God was moved to bring vengeance on the Heathenish Empire of *Rome* that had shed their *blood.* Now not only Christs *Soule* (as theirs) lives to cry, but his whole person; for he is *risen againe*, and lives to intercede for ever. In the *Rev.* 1. *v.* 18. Christ appearing to *John*, when hee would speake but one speech that should move all in him, he sayes but this, *I am he that liveth, and was dead*, and dyed for thee. And whole heart doth it not move, to read it with faith? and doth it not move his Father (think you) who was the chiefe cause and motioner of his death) to think, *My Sonne* that was dead, and dyed at my request for sinners, is now alive again, and liveth to intercede, and liveth to *see the travaile of his soule* fulfilled and satisfied? God pronounceth this upon it in that 53. of *Isa. v.* 10. *By his knowledge* (or faith in him) *shall he justifie many*; even as many as he dyed for. *Who then shall condemne? Christ that was dead is alive, and liveth to intercede.* Sect. 5.

CHAP.

Sect. 5.

CHAP. VIII.

Thirdly, The prevalencie of Christs intercession, and of his grace with his Father, demonstrated from the greatnesse and absoluteneſſe of his power, to doe what ever he askes.

3. From the great power over all things that God the Father hath put into his hands, and therefore will deny him nothing.

A Third demonstration both of Christs greatnesse with God, and his power to prevaile for us, is taken from this, that God hath put all power into his hand, to do what ever he will, hath made him his King to doe what pleaseth him either in Heaven, Earth, or Hell; yea, to doe all that God himselfe ever meanes to doe, or all that God desires to doe: And certainely if his Father hath been so gracious to him as to bestow so high and absolute a soveraignty on him, as to accompliſh and effect what ever hee meanes to doe, surely his purpose was never to deny Christ any request, that he should after this make: he would never have advanced the humane nature to that absoluteneſſe else. Those two great Monarchs made great grants and largesses,

the

the one to *Esther*, the other to *Herodias* daughter; but yet they were limited to the halfe of their Kingdomes: so *Marke* 6. and *Esther* 5. 6. and the royall power in their Kingdomes, they meant still to retaine and reserve wholly to themselves: But God having placed Christ on his Throne, bids him aske even to the whole of his Kingdom, for God hath made him a King, sitting on his Throne with him, not to share halves, but to have all power in heaven and earth; *he hath committed all judgement to the Sonne*, to save and condemne whom ever he will; and so farre as the Kingdome of God goes, or is extended he may doe any thing. So *John* 5. 21. *As the Father raiseth up the dead, so the Son quickneth whom he will, for as the Father hath life in himselfe, so hath he given to the Son to have life in himselfe, ver.* 26. and hath in like manner *given authority to execute judgement also*, as the *Son of man*, (namely of himselfe) *vers.* 27. as he had said, *He had given him to have life in himselfe, Verse* 26. (not dependently, as wee have, Sect. 5.

but

Sect. 5. but independently) ſo to execute judgement alſo, *ver.* 27. So that Chriſts will is as free, and himſelfe as abſolute a Monarch and King of himſelfe, as God himſelfe is. He indeed hath it not *à ſeipſo*, but *in ſeipſo*, not *à ſeipſo* originally, but from his Father, but *in ſeipſo* independently.

Though Chriſt as King can command all things, yet to honour his Father he intercedes for what himſelfe commands,

Now then, if hee who is King, and may and doth of himſelfe command all that is done, as abſolutely as God himſelfe doth, (I ſpeak in reſpect of the execution of things downward, by ſecond cauſes) if he, over and above, to honour his Father, will aske all that himſelfe hath power to doe, what will not be done? *Qui rogat, & imperare poteſt*, He that can, and doth command what ever hee would have done, and it is ſtraight done; if hee ſhall ask and intreat, what will not be done? As a King who ſues for Peace, backt with a potent Army which is able to win what he intreats for, muſt needs treat more effectually: So doth Chriſt ſue for every thing, with power to effect it. Remember that hee is ſaid here in the

the Text, firſt to be at Gods right hand, and then to intercede. Hee treats the ſalvation of ſinners, as a mighty Prince treats the giving up ſome Towne to him, which lyes ſeated under a Caſtle of his, which commands that Towne: he ſtands treating with the Governour, having his Ordnance ready for the battery, and to bring all into ſubjection, as 2 *Cor.* 10. 4. And this is a conſideration that God himſelf tooke, in that 2. *Pſalm.* when hee made him that promiſe, (*Aske and I will give thee*) why hee made ſo large a grant: He had ſaid before, *ver.* 6. *I have ſet my King upon my holy hill of Sion*, (which made him (one would thinke) paſt asking) and above the condition of an Interceſſour. Now God ſayes of him, He is *My King*, not in reſpect of his commanding God, (that were blaſphemy to thinke) but it is ſpoken in reſpect of commanding all below him. God having ſet him in his Throne, to doe as much as hee himſelfe would (or meanes) to have done, ſayes, He is my King to rule all, not ſo much under me, as for me, and Sect. 5.

That this is a conſideration upon which God denyes him nothing.

Sect. 5. and in my ſtead ; yet abſolutely, and in himſelfe, *The Father judgeth no man.* Now when the Father had firſt made and conſtituted him thus great a King, then hee bids him Aske, to whom hee had firſt given this abſolute power to command. We may (without blaſphemy) ſay of this God-man, that God hath (not onely not the heart, as being his Father, but) not the power to croſſe any thing he doth. Thus faſt hath he God unto him. Onely hee (who in reſpect of this his power is to be honoured as the Father, as *John* 5. 23. yet) to honour his Father, who gave this power originally to him as Mediatour ; He is to aske for that which of himſelfe he yet can doe. And therefore (ſayes God) though thou art a King, (ſo *Verſe* 6.) and all my Kingdome, even *the utmoſt ends of the earth* are *thine inheritance* by a naturall right, now that thou art my Sonne, (as *verſe* 8.) yet becauſe thou art *My King*, of my appointing, and *I have ſet thee* on the Throne, (as the word is, *verſe* 6.) and (*thou art my Son, and* I *have begotten thee*) therefore

fore acknowledge my grant in all, Sect. 5.
Aske of me, and I *will give thee the utmost ends of the earth for thy inheritance*: I cannot deny thee, but I would have thee aske; And therfore Christ asks. Yet still withall remember, that he asks, who can command the thing to be done: and yet as he must aske ere the thing be done, so if hee aske, it must needs bee granted. These are the termes betweene this Father and this Sonne; (who in a word) had not beene so great a Father, if hee had not had a Son thus great, that himselfe could not deny what this Son would have done: it is for his owne honour to have such a Son: So John 5. 23. *That they might honour the Sonne, as they honour the Father*, therefore *All judgement is committed to him.* Now then if hee who hath so much power, will joyne the force of intreaty with a Father that so loves him; if he who is *The Word of his Father*, that commands, creates, and upholds all, as *Heb.* 1. [*He spake, and it was done*] if he will become a Word to his Father, and speake a word for us,

and

Sect. 5. and aske all that he meanes to doe; how forcible will such words bee?

How forcible Christs prayers and intercession must needs be by an inference frō the prevalencie of ours.

Therefore observe Christs manner of praying, *Ioh.* 17. (which prayer is a plat-form of Intercession in Heaven) *v.*24. [*Father I will*] *that they whom thou hast given me, be where I am.* He prayes like a King, who is in joynt commission with God. If God puts that honour upon our prayers, that wee are said *to have power with God*, as *Iacob*, *Hos.* 12.3. that if God bee never so angry, yet by *taking hold of his strength*, wee hold *his hands*, as *Esay* 27. 5. that God cries out to *Moses*, like a man whose hands are held, *Let me alone*, *Exod.* 32. 10. yea that he accounts it as a *command* and a *Mandamus*, so he styles it, *Esay* 45. 11. [*Commande ye me*] so unable is he to goe against it. Then how much more doth Jesus Christs Intercession bind Gods hands, and command all in Heaven and earth? Therefore *Zach.* 1. you have Christ *the Angel of the Covenant*, brought in interceding with the Father for his Church, and hee speakes abruptly as one full

full of complaints, and in an ex- Sect. 5.
postulating way, [*O Lord of Hosts, how long, wilt thou not be mercifull to Hierusalem and the Cities of Judah?*] and *ver.* 13. *Zachary* saith that he observed, that the *Lord answered the Angel with good words and comfortable.* God was faine to give him good words (as we use to say) that is, words that might pacifie him as words of comfort to us, so good words in respect to the Angels complaint. And you may observe, how in the answer God returnes upon it, (which he bade *Zachary* write) God excuseth it (as it were) to Christ, that his Church had been so long and so hardly dealt withall; as if beyond his intention, he layes the fault on the instruments, *I was but a little displeased, but they helpt forward the affliction, ver.* 15. This is spoken and carried after the manner of men, to shew how tender God is of displeasing Christ our Intercessor: that when Christ hath (as it were) beene a long while silent, and let God alone, and his people have been ill dealt withall; he on the suddain in the end intercedes & cō-

plains

Sect. 5. plaines of it, and it is not only instantly redreſſed, but excuſed for times paſt, with *good words, and comfortable words.* Chriſts father will not diſpleaſe him, nor goe againſt him in any thing.

A farther explication of this demonſtration

Now that you may ſee a reaſon of this, and have all cavils and exceptions taken away, that may ariſe againſt this; and how that there is an impoſſibility that it ſhould bee otherwiſe: know, that this Father and this Sonne, though two Perſons have yet but one will betweene them, and but one power betweene them, (though the Son *ad extra* outwardly executes all) John 10. 30. *My Father and* I *are* one; that is, have but one and the ſame power to ſave you, and one minde and will: So alſo, John 5. 19. *the Sonne can doe nothing of himſelfe, but what he ſees the Father doe, and what ever he doth, the ſame the Father doth alſo:* they conſpire in one, have one power, one will: and then it is no matter though God commit all power to the Son, and that the Sonne though hee hath all power, muſt aſk all of the Father, for

for to be sure what ever he asks, the Father hath not power to deny; for they have but one will and power. They are one; so as if God deny him, he must deny himselfe, which the Apostle tells us he cannot doe, 2 *Tim.* 2. 13. And so in the same sense that God is said *not to have power to deny himselfe*; in the same sense it may be said, he hath not power to deny Christ what he askes. Therefore God might well make him an absolute King, and betrust him with all power; and Christ might well oblige himselfe, notwithstanding this power, to aske all that he meanes to doe; for they have but one will and one power, so as our salvation is made sure by this on all hands. [*I come not to doe my will, but the will of him who sent me; and his will is, that I shall lose none of all those whom hee hath given me,*] *John* 6. 38. 39. And therefore *who shall condemne? It is Christ that intercedes.* As *who shall resist Gods will?* (as the Apostle speakes) so who shall resist or gaine-say Christs Intercession? God himselfe cannot, no more then hee Sect. 5.

Sect. 5. can gaine-say or deny himselfe.

CHAP. VIII.

The potencie and prevalencie of Christs Intercession, demonstrated from the graciousnesse *of the Person* with whom *he intercedes, considered first as he is the* Father *of Christ himself.*

The readinesse in God to hear Christ for us.

WE have seene the greatnesse of the Person interceding, and many considerations from thence, which may perswade us of his prevailing for us. Let us now in the next place, consider the *graciousnesse* of the *Person, with whom* he intercedes, which the Scripture for our comfort herein doth distinctly set before us, to the end that in this great matter, our joy and security may every way be full. Thus in that 1 *John* 2.1. when for the comfort and support of Beleevers, against the evill of the greatest sins that can befall them after conversion, the Apostle mindes them of Christs Intercession in those words, *If any man sin, we have an Advocate, Jesus Christ the righteous*: mentioning

ning therein the power and prevalencie of such an Advocate, through his own *righteousnesse*: But yet over and above all this, the more fully to assure us of his good successe herein for us, he also adds, [*An Advocate with the Father.*] He insinuates and suggests the relation and gracious disposition of him, upon whose supreame will our case ultimately dependeth, [*The Father*] as affording a new comfort and encouragement, even as great as doth the righteousnesse & power of the Person interceding. He sayes not, [*With God onely*] as elsewhere, but [*With the Father.*] And that his words might afford the more full matter of confidence, and be the more comprehensive, and take in all, he expresseth not this relation of God limitedly, as confined to his Fatherhood, either unto Christ only, or us alone: He sayes not onely [*An Advocate with his Father,*] though that would have given much assurance, or [*With your Father*] though that might afford much boldnesse; but indefinitely he saies [*With the Father,*] as intending Sect. 5.

Sect. 5. to take in both; to aſcertain us of the prevailing efficacie of Chriſts Interceſſion, from both. You have both theſe elſewhere more diſtinctly, and on purpoſe, and *together* mentioned, *John* 20.17. *I goe to my Father, and your Father*, ſayes Chriſt there: And it was ſpoken after that all his Diſciples had before forſaken him, and *Peter* denied him; when *Chriſt* himſelfe would ſend them the greateſt cordiall that his heart could utter, and wrap up the ſtrongeſt ſublimation of comforts in one pill; What was it? Go tell them, (ſayes he) not ſo much that I have ſatisfied for ſinne, overcome death, or am riſen, but that I *Aſcend*: For in that which Chriſt doth for us being aſcended, lyes the height, the top of our comfort. And whereas he might have ſaid, (and it had been matter of unſpeakable comfort) I aſcend to heaven, and ſo where I am, you ſhall be alſo; yet he chooſeth rather to ſay, [*I aſcend to the Father*,] for that indeed contained the foundation, ſpring and cauſe of their comfort; even that relation of Gods, [his Fatherhood] with

In that hee is both the Father of Chriſt, and alſo our Father.

with which Christ was to deale after his ascending, for them. And because when before his death hee had spoken of his going to his Father, their hearts had beene troubled, *John* 14. 28. they thinking it was for his owne preferment onely, (as Christs speech there implies they did) therefore he here distinctly addes, I *ascend to my Father and your Father, to my God and your God.* He had in effect spoken as much before, in the words foregoing, *Goe tell my Brethren*, but that was onely *implicitely*; therefore more plainly and *explicitely* hee sayes it, for their further comfort, [I *goe to my Father, and your Father.*] And consider, that Christ being now newly risen, and having as yet not seene his Disciples, and being now to send a message, his first message, a Gospell of good tidings to them, (and that in a briefe sentence) by a woman; hee chooseth out this as the first word to be spoken from him now, when he was come out of the other world, at their first heare-say of his returne, he utters forth at once, the bottome,

Sect. 5.

Sect. 5. the depth of all comfort, the ſumme of all joy; then which the Goſpell knowes no greater, nor can goe higher: So as if Chriſt ſhould intend now at this day to ſend good newes from Heaven to any of you, it would be but this, I am here an Advocate, interceding with my Father, and thy Father. All is ſpoken in that. Even [*He*] could not ſpeak more comfort, who is the God of comfort. Now therefore let us apart conſider theſe two relations, which afford each of them their proper comfort and aſſurance; both that Chriſt is aſcended, and intercedes with *his* owne *Father*; and alſo with *Our Father*: and therefore how prevailing muſt this Interceſſion be?

1. That Chriſt intercedes with his Father.

Firſt, Chriſt intercedes with his Father, who neither will nor can deny him any thing. To confirme this, you have a double Teſtimony, and of two of the greateſt witneſſes in Heaven: both a Teſtimony of *Chriſts* owne, whilſt he was on Earth; and Gods owne word alſo declared, ſince Chriſt came to Heaven. The 1. in the 11. of *Iohn*, whilſt

whilst Christ was here on earth, and had not as then fully performed that great service which hee was to finish, which since he having done, it must needs ingratiate him the more with God his Father. When *Lazarus* was now foure dayes dead, *Martha*, to move Christ to pitty her, first tells him, that if hee had been there before her brother dyed, that then he had not dyed: and then (as having spoke too little) shee adds, yea thou canst (if thou pleasest) remedie it yet. *But* I *know* (sayes she, *ver.* 22.) *that even now* (though he be so long dead) *whatever thou wilt aske of God, God will give it thee.* Here was her confidence in Christs intercession, though this were a greater worke then ever yet Christ had done any. And Christ seeing her faith in this, hee confirmes her speech when he came to raise him, and takes a solemne occasion to declare, that God had never denyed him any request that hee had ever put up to him, first thanking God particularly that hee had heard him in this, *Verse* 41. *Father* I *thanke thee, that* Sect. 5.

Sect. 5. *thou haſt heard me:* He had (it ſeems) prayed for the thing at her entreaty; and now, before the thing was done, he (being aſſured his prayer was heard) gives thankes; ſo confident was hee of his being heard. And then ſecondly, ſhews upon what this his confidence at this time was grounded, his conſtant experience that God had never denyed him any requeſt; for it followes, *ver.* 42. *And I know that thou heareſt me alwaies,* (& therefore was ſo bold, as to expreſſe my confidence in this, before the thing was done) *but becauſe of them who ſtood by, I ſaid it.* As if hee had ſaid, Though I gave this publick thanks for being heard onely in this one miracle, and at no time the like ſo publickly; yet this is no new thing, but thus it hath beene alwaies hitherto, in all the miracles I have wrought, and requeſts I have put up, which made mee ſo to give thankes before-hand: and this is not the firſt time that God hath heard me thus; which I ſpeake, that they might beleeve. Thus he was never denyed on earth, from the

the first to the last. For this was one of his greatest miracles, and reserved unto the last, even a few dayes before his crucifying. Sect. 5.

And now he hath performed the service designed him, and is come to heaven, let us secondly heare God himselfe speake, what he meanes to doe for him. You heard before, when hee came first to Heaven, what God said to him, and how he welcomed him with a [*Sit thou at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy foot-stool:*] And before Christ opened his mouth to speak a word, by way of any request to God, (which was the office that he was now to execute) God himselfe prevented him, and added, [*Thou art my Sonne, this day have* I *begotten thee: Aske of mee, and* I *will give thee, Psal. 2. ver. 28.*] He speakes it at Christs first comming up to Heaven, when he had *his King on his holy hill*, as *ver. 6.* Christ was new glorified, which was a new begetting to him, *To day have* I *begotten thee:* And this is, as if hee had said, I know you will aske mee now for all that

Sect. 5. you have dyed for; and this I promiſe you before-hand, before you ſpeake a word, or make any requeſt unto me, you ſhall aske nothing but it ſhall be granted; and this I ſpeake once for all, as a boone and a grace granted you upon your birth-day, as the ſolemneſt celebration of it (for ſuch was his Reſurrection, and Aſcenſion, and ſitting at Gods right hand) *This day have I begotten thee; Aske of me and I will give thee.* So full of joy was his Fathers heart, that he had his Sonne in Heaven with him, whom he had begotten from everlaſting, and ordained *to this glory*, who was lately dead, and in a manner loſt, and therefore now (as it were) new begotten. Gods heart was ſo full, that he could not hold from expreſſing it in the largeſt favours and grants. And whereas Kings upon their owne birth-dayes, uſe to grant ſuch favours to their favourites: So *Herod* on his birth-day to the Daughter of *Herodias*, promiſed with an oath to give her whatſoever ſhe would aske, *Matth.* 14.7. God himſelfe having no birth-day,

nor

nor being of himselfe capable of it, yet having a Sonne who had, hee honours him with that grace upon that day; and if Queene *Esther* (a Subject, yea, a slave in her originall condition) was so prevalent for the Jewes her People and Nation, when their case was desperate, and when there was an irrevocable decree past (and that not to be altered) for their ruine and destruction, then what will not Christ (so great a Sonne, even equall with his Father) prevaile for, with his Father, for his brethren? Be their case, for the time past, never so desperate, bee there never so many threatnings gone out against them, never so many presidents and examples of men condemned before for the like sinnes, and the like case, yet Christ can prevaile against them all. Sect. 5.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

The potencie of Christs intercession, demonstrated, in that he intercedes with God who is Our Father. *How Gods heart is as much inclined to heare Christ for us, as Christ is to intercede.*

SEcondly, Christ is an Advocate for us with *Our Father*: You may perhaps thinke there is little in that; but Christ puts much upon it; yea so much, as if that God would however grant all that Christ himselfe meanes to aske, whether Christ asked it or no. This you have expresly in *John* 16.26,27. *At that day* (sayes Christ) *you shall aske in my name, and I say not to you, that I will pray the Father for you; for the Father himselfe loveth you.* To open this place, where he sayes [*at that day;*] The day he meanes through this whole Chapter, is that time when the Holy Ghost should bee shed upon them: for throughout his discourse, hee still speakes of the fruites of his Ascension,

and

and of giving the Comforter, which was done upon his aſcending, and was the firſt fruits of his Prieſtly office in Heaven. Thus *Peter* informes us, *Acts* 2. 33. *Hee being* (ſayes he) *exalted by the right hand of God, and having received* (namely by asking, *Aske and I will give thee*) *of the Father the promiſe of the holy Ghoſt, he hath ſhed forth this, which you now ſee and heare.* Now of that time, when he ſhall be in Heaven, he ſayes, *I ſay not that I will pray for you*: which is not meant, that Chriſt prayes not for us in Heaven, but rather thoſe very words are the higheſt intimation, that hee would and doth pray for us, that can be. When men would moſt ſtrongly intimate their purpoſe of a kindneſſe they mean to do for one, they uſe to ſay, [I do not ſay that I love you, or that I will doe this or that for you;] which is as much as to ſay, I will ſurely doe it, and doe it to purpoſe. But Chriſts ſcope here is, as in the higheſt manner to promiſe them that he would pray for them; ſo withall, further to tell them for their more abundant Sect. 5.

aſſurance

Sect. 5. assurance and security, that besides their having the benefit of his prayers, *God* himselfe *so loves them* of himselfe, that indeed that alone were enough to obtaine any thing at his hands, which they shall but aske in his name; so as he needs not pray for them, and yet he will too. But now in case that he himselfe pray for them, and they themselves in his name, and both unto a Father, who of himselfe loveth them, and who hath purposed to grant all, before either he or they should aske; what hope must there needs be then of a good successe? This is both the meaning of this place, and a great truth to be considered on by us, to the purpose in hand: That it is the meaning of the place, the manner of Christs speech implies, [*I say not that I will pray the Father for you, for the Father himselfe loveth you.*] It is such a speech as Christ used upon a cleane contrary occasion, *John* 5. 45. *Doe not thinke* (sayes he) *that I will accuse you to the Father, there is one who accuseth you, even Moses, &c.* He there threatens the obstinate and

and accurſed *Phariſees* with condemnation: Never ſtand thinking that it is I (ſayes hee) who am your onely enemy and accuſer, that will procure your condemnation; and ſo proſecute the matter againſt you meerely for my own intereſt; no, I ſhall not need to doe it: though I ſhould not accuſe you, *your owne Moſes in whom you truſt*, hee is enough to condemne you, he will doe your errand ſufficiently, you would be ſure to be damned by his words and ſayings; I ſhall not need to trouble my ſelfe to come in and enter my action againſt you too, *Moſes* and his Law would follow the ſuit, and bee enough to condemne you to Hell. So as this Speech doth not imply that Chriſt will not at all accuſe them; no, he meanes to bring in his action againſt them too: for he after ſayes, *if he had not ſpoke to them, they had had no ſinne*, and therefore hee meant to bring the greateſt accuſation of all. Now in an oppoſite (though parallel) ſpeech here, to cõfort his Diſciples, he ſaves [illegible] ſay not that I will pray for you [illegible] that God Sect. 5.

may

Sect. 5. may ſave you, I who your ſelves ſhal ſee will dye for you, I ſay not that I will pray for you, not I. But though I ſpeake this to inſinuate in the higheſt manner, that I will; (for if I ſpend my blood for you, will I not ſpend my breath for you?) yet the truth is, that the caſe ſo ſtands, that but for Gods own ordination, I ſhould not need to doe it, *for the father himſelfe loves you*: (that is) the Father of his own motion, and proper good will taken up of himſelfe towards you, and not wrought in him by me, doth love you, and beares ſo much love to you, as hee can deny you nothing, for hee is *your Father* as well as mine. How much more then ſhall you be ſaved, when I ſhall ſtrike in too, and uſe all my intereſt in him for you? Chriſt on purpoſe uſeth this ſpeech, ſo to daſh out of their hearts that conceit which harboureth in many of ours who looke upon God in the matter of Salvation, as one who is hardly intreated to come off, to ſave ſinners, and with whom Chriſt (through the backwardneſſe of his heart) hath ſo much adoe; and

we

we are apt to thinke that when hee doth come off to pardon, he doth it only and meerly at Christs entreaty, and for his sake, having otherwise no innate motion in himselfe sufficient to encline his heart to it; but that it is in this transaction by Christ with him, as a Favourite procures a pardon for a Traitor, whose person the King cares not for; only at his Favourites suit and request hee grants it, which else he would never have done. You are deceived, sayes Christ, it is otherwise: my Fathers heart is as much towards you, and for your salvations, as mine is: Himselfe of himselfe loveth you. And the truth is, that God took up as vast a love unto us of himselfe at first as ever he hath borne us since: and all that Christ doth for us, is but the expression of that love which was taken up originally in Gods owne heart. Thus we finde, that out of that love he gave Christ for us: So *John* 3.16. *God so loved the world* (of elect) *that he gave his only begotten Sonne to dye, &c.* Yea, *CHRISTS* death was but a meanes to commend or set forth Sect. 5.

that

Sect. 5. *that love* of his unto us: So *Rom.* 5. 8. it was God alſo that did himſelfe give the perſons unto Chriſt, and under-hand ſet him on worke to mediate for them: *God was in Chriſt reconciling the World to himſelfe*: Hee onely uſed Chriſt as his Inſtrument to bring it honourably about. *All the Bleſſings* he means to give us, he firſt purpoſed, and intended in himſelfe: (ſo *Epheſ.* 1. 3. 5. 9. 11. compared) *out of the good pleaſure of his will*, yet [*in Chriſt*] (as it is added there) as the meanes through which he would convey them: yea, Chriſt addes not one drop of love to Gods heart; onely he drawes it out, he brocheth it, and makes it flow forth, whoſe current had otherwiſe been ſtopt. The truth is, that God ſuborned Chriſt to beg them on our behalfe for an honourable way of carrying it, as alſo to make us prize this favour the more; ſo as his heart is as ready to give all to us, as Chriſts is to ask, and this out of his pure love to us.

The Interceſſion therefore of Chriſt muſt needs ſpeed, when Gods heart

heart is thus of it ſelfe prepared to us. In *Eſay* 53.10. it is ſaid, *The pleaſure of the Lord ſhall proſper in his hand*: If our ſalvation be in Chriſts hand, it is in a good hand; but if it be the pleaſure of the Lord too, it muſt needs proſper. It is ſaid of our hearts and prayers, that *Hee prepareth the heart, and heareth the prayer*; much more therefore when his owne heart is prepared to grant the ſuit, will hee eaſily heare it. When one hath a minde to doe a thing, then the leaſt hint procures it of him: So a father having a minde to ſpare his childe, he will take any excuſe, any ones mediation, even of a ſervant, a ſtranger, or an enemy, rather of none. Now when Chriſt ſhall ſpeake for us, and ſpeake Gods owne heart, how prevalent muſt thoſe words needs be? *Davids* ſoul *longing to go forth unto Abſalom*, (2 *Sam.* 13. *ult.*) whom notwithſtanding (for the honour of a Father, and a Kings State-policy, and to ſatisfie the world) he had baniſht the Court for his treaſon; when *Joab* perceived it, *that the kings heart was towards Abſalom*, Sect. 5.

Sect. 5. *lom*, (*Cha.* 14.1.) and that the King onely needed one to ſpeake a good word for him, he ſubornes a woman, a ſtranger (no matter whom, for it had been all one for ſpeeding) with a made tale to come to the King; and you know how eaſily it tooke and prevailed with him, and how glad the Kings heart was of that occaſion: even ſo acceptable it was to him, that *Joab* could not have done him a greater kindeneſſe; and that *Joab* knew well enough. Thus it is with Gods heart towards us, Chriſt aſſures us of it, and you may believe him in this caſe: For Chriſt might have tooke all the Honour to himſelfe, and made us beholding to himſelfe alone for all Gods kindeneſſe to us; but he deals plainly, and tels us that his Father is as ready as himſelfe; and this hee doth for his Fathers honour and our comfort; And therefore it is that, *Joh.* 17. in that this prayer ſo often cited in this diſcourſe, he pleads our election, *John* 17. 6. *Thine they were, and thou gaveſt them me*; thou commendedſt them unto mee, and badeſt mee pray for them,

them, and I doe but commend the same to thee againe. In the High Priests Breast-plate when he went into the Holy of Holies, were set twelve stones, on which were written the names of the twelve Tribes: the mystery of which is this, Christ bears us and our names in his Heart, when hee goes to God: and moreover we are Gods jewels, precious in his owne account and choice. So God calls them, *Mal.* 3. 17. *Made precious to him out of his love.* So *Isai.* 43. 4. So that God loves us as jewels chosen by him, but much more when he beholds us set and presented unto him in the breast-plate of Christs heart and prayer. Sect. 5.

To conclude therefore, we have now made both ends of this Text to meet, Gods love, and Christs intercession. The Apostle began with that, *Who shall accuse? it is God that justifies*, and he being for us, *who can bee against us?* The Father himself loves us as he is our Father: And then he ends with this, *Christ intercedes*, namely, with our Father & his Father, *who then shall condemn?*

Who,

Sect. 5. Who, or what can possibly condemne, all these things being for us, the least of which were alone enough to save us?

Let us now looke round about, and take a full view and prospect at once, of all those particulars that Christ hath done and doth for us, and their severall joynt *influence* which they have into our salvation.

1. In that Christ *dyed*, it assures us of a perfect *price* payed for, and a *right* to eternall life thereby acquired.

2. In that he *rose againe* as a common person, this assures us yet further, that there is a formall, *legall*, and irrevocable act of *justification* of us passed and enrolled in that Court of Heaven between Christ and God: and that in his being then justifyed, wee were also justified in him, so that thereby our Justification is made past re-calling.

3. Christs *ascension into Heaven* is a further act of his taking *possession* of *Heaven* for us, he then formally entring upon that our right in our stead,

stead; and so is a further confirmation of our salvation to us. But still we in our owne persons are not yet saved, this being but done to us as we are representatively in Christ as our Head. Sect. 5.

4. Therefore he *sits at Gods right hand*, which imports his being armed and invested with *all power in Heaven and Earth to give* and apply *eternall life* to us.

5. And last of all there remaines *intercession* to finish and compleat our salvation; to doe the thing, even to save us. And as Christs *death* and *Resurrection* were to procure our *justification*: so *his sitting at Gods right hand* and *intercession* are to procure *salvation*; and by faith we may see it done, and behold our soules not onely sitting in Heaven, as in Christ a common person sitting there in our right; as an evidence that we shall come thither: but also through Christs Intercession begun wee may see our selves actually possessed of Heaven. And there I will leave all you that are beleevers by faith possessed of it, and solacing your soules in it,

and

Sect. 5. and doe you feare condemnation if you can.

CHAP. X.

The use of all: Containing some Encouragements for weak believers, from Christs Intercession, *out of* Heb. 7. 25.

NOw for a conclusion of this Discourse, I will adde a briefe Use of *Encouragement*; and this suited to the lowest Faith of the weakest Beleever, who cannot put forth any act of Assurance, and is likewise discouraged from comming in unto Christ. And I shall confine my selfe onely unto what those most comfortable words (as any in the Booke of God) doe hold forth, which the Apostle hath uttered concerning Christs Intercession (the Point in hand;) [*Wherefore he is able to save to the uttermost, those that come to God by him: seeing hee ever liveth to make intercession for them,*] words which I have had the most recourse unto in this Doctrinall part, of any other, as most tending to the clearing of many things

things about *Intercession*: And which I would also commend to, and leave with poore Believers to have recourse unto for their comfort, as a sufficient Abundary of *Consolation* unto their Soules, and as a *Catholicon* or universall Cordiall against all faintings and misgivings of spirit whatsoever. Sect. 5.

In the words observe,

1. A *Definition of Faith* by the lowest acts of it, for the comfort of weak Christians.

2. *Encouragements* unto such a *Faith*, opposite to all misgivings and discouragements whatsoever.

1. A Definition of Faith; and such, as will suit the weakest Beleever. *It is a comming unto God by Christ for Salvation.*

1. It is [*a comming*] to be saved. Let not the want of *Assurance* that God will save thee, or that Christ is thine, discourage thee, if thou hast but a heart to *Come* to God by Christ to be saved, though thou knowest not whether he will yet save thee, or no. Remember that the Beleevers of the New Testament are here described to bee

Sect. 5. [*commers*] to God by Christ; Such as *goe out* of themselves, and rest in nothing in themselves, doe *come* unto God through Christ for salvation, though with trembling.

2. It is a comming [*unto God.*] For he is the ultimate object of our faith,, and the person with whom we have to do in believing, & from whom wee are to receive salvation if ever we obtaine it.

3. It is a comming unto God [*by Christ*:] which phrase is used in this Epistle in an allusion to the worshippers of the old Testament; who when they had sinned, were directed to go to God by a *Priest*, who with a Sacrifice made an Atonement for them. Now Christ is the great and true high Priest, *by whom we have accesse to the Father*, 2 *Ephes.* 18. The word is προσαγωγὴν, *a leading by the hand.* Doest thou not know how to appeare before God, or to come to him? Come first to Christ, and hee will take thee by the hand, and goe along with thee, and lead thee to his Father.

4. It is a comming unto God by Christ [*for Salvation.*] Many a poore

poore soule is apt to thinke, that in comming to God by faith, it must not aime at it selfe, or its owne salvation; yes, it may; for that is here made the errand or businesse which faith hath with God in comming to him; or which it comes for, and this is secretly couched in these words: for the Apostle speaking of the very aime of the heart in comming, he therfore on purpose mentions Christs ability to *save*; [He is able *to save.*] Sect. 5.

2 v. Here are many encouragemēts to such a *faith* as is not yet growne up unto assurance of Salvation.

1. Here is the most suitable object propounded unto it, namely, *Christ as interceding*; which work of intercession, because it remaines for Christ as *yet to doe* for a soule that is to be saved, and which he is every day *a doing* for us; therfore it is more peculiarly fitted unto a *Recumbents faith.* For when such a soule comes and *casts it selfe* upon *Christ*, That thing in *Christ*, which must needs most suit that kinde of Act, is that which is *yet to be done* by Christ for that soule. Now for that soule to

Sect. 5. *come* to Christ to die for it, and offer up himselfe a Sacrifice, (as Sinners did use to come to the High-Priest to sacrifice for them) this were bootlesse, for (as it is *ver.* 27.) hee hath at *once done that* already. And as for *what is* already *past* and *done*, such a believers faith is oftentimes exceedingly puzled, what manner of act to put forth towards Christ about it: as (for example) when it is about to come unto God, & it hears of an *Election* of some unto salvation from all eternity made by him; because this is an act already past by God, the soule knows it to be in vain to cast it selfe upon God for Election, or to come unto him to elect and choose it selfe. And so in like manner, when the soule lookes upon *Christs Death*; because it is done and past, it knowes not how to take it in in believing, when it wanteth assurance that Christ dyed for it, (though it should come to Christ to be saved by vertue of his *death.*) But there this is one work that remaines still to be done by him for us, and which he is daily a doing; and that is, *Interceding*,

ceding', for *he lives ever to Intercede*, Sect. 5.
or to *pray* for us in the strength and merit of that his Sacrifice once offered up. This therefore is more directly and peculiarly fitted unto a *Faith of Recumbency*, or of *Comming unto Christ*: the proper act of such a Faith (as it is distinguished from *Faith of Assurance*) being *a casting ones selfe upon Christ for something it would have done or wrought for one.* Hence Intercession becomes a fit object for the aime and errand of such a Faith, in this its comming to Christ, as also [*to be saved*] is, it being a thing yet to bee wrought and accomplisht for me by Christ, is therefore a fit marke for such a Faith to levell at in its comming to Christ. Those Acts of God and Christ which are past, *Faith of Assurance* doth more easily comply with: such a Faith takes in with comfort that Christ hath *dyed* for mee, and *risen* againe, and doth now *Intercede* for me, and so I shall certainely bee saved: but so cannot this weake faith doe. Come thou therefore unto Christ, as to save thee through his Death

Sect. 5. past, and by the merit of it, so for the present, and for the time to come, to take thy Cause in hand, and to *intercede* for thee: it is a great relieſe unto ſuch a Faith (as cannot put forth Acts of Aſſurance, that what hath beene done by Chriſt hath beene done for it) that God hath left Chriſt this worke yet to doe for us. So as the Interceſſion of Chriſt may afford matter to ſuch a Faith to throw it ſelfe upon Chriſt, to perform it for us, and it may ſet him aworke to doe it.

2. Now if ſuch a ſoule ask, But will Chriſt upon my comming to him for ſalvation, be ſet awork to intercede for me, and undertake my cauſe?

I anſwer it out of thoſe words, [*He lives to intercede for them who come to God by him.*] He lives on purpoſe to perform this worke; it is the end of his living, the buſineſſe of his life. And as he received a commandment to dye, and it was the end of his life on earth; ſo hee hath received a command to intercede, and to be a common High-

High-priest for all that come to God by him. God hath appointed him to this work by an oath, *Hee sware, and would not repent, thou shalt be a Priest for ever, after the order of Melchisedech*; and this is the end of his life in Heaven. That as in the old Law the High-priest (Christs type in this) *ought to offer up the sacrifice* of every one that came unto God by him, (as *Heb.* 5. 5.) in like manner Christ; for it is *his calling*, (as you have it, *Verse 6.*) Otherwise, as that Woman said to *Philip*, when she came to him for justice, and he put her off, *Then cease* (sayes shee) *to bee a King*: So if Christ should deny any such soule to take its cause in hand, hee must then *cease to be a Priest. He lives to intercede: He is a Priest called by God, as was Aaron, ver. 6.* Wherefore he *ought* to do it, in that it is his *office.* Sect. 5.

3. And if thy soule yet feareth the difficulty of its owne particular ease, in respect of the greatnesse of thy sinnes, and the circumstances thereof, or any consideration whatsoever which to thy view doth make thy salvation an hard

Sect. 5. ſuit to obtaine: the Apoſtle therefore further adds, [*He is able to ſave to the utmoſt*] (what ever thy cauſe be) and this, through this his Interceſſion. That ſame word [*to the utmoſt*] is a good word, and well put in for our comfort. Conſider it therefore, for it is a reaching word, and extends it ſelfe ſo farre, that thou canſt not looke beyond it. Let thy ſoule be ſet upon the higheſt mount that ever any creature was yet ſet upon, and that is enlarged to take in and view the moſt ſpacious proſpect both of ſinne and miſery, and difficulties of being ſaved, that ever yet any poore humbled ſoule did caſt within it ſelfe: yea joyne to theſe all the objections and hindrances of thy Salvation that the heart of man can ſuppoſe or invent againſt it ſelfe: lift up thy eyes and looke to the *utmoſt* thou canſt ſee, and Chriſt by his Interceſſion is able to ſave thee beyond the Horizon and furtheſt compaſſe of thy thoughts, even to the *utmoſt*, and worſt caſe the heart of Man can ſuppoſe. It is not thy having *laine long* in Sin, *long* under

ter-

terrours and *despaires*, or having sinned often after many enlightnings, that can hinder thee from being saved by Christ. Doe but remember this same word [*to the uttermost*,] and then put in what exceptions thou wilt or canst, lay all the barres in thy way that are imaginable; yet know thou that the gates of Hell *shall not prevaile against thee*. Sect. 5.

4. Againe, consider but what it is *that* Christ, who hath by his death done enough to save thee, doth yet further for thee in Heaven. If thou thoughtest thou hadst all the Saints in Heaven and Earth joyntly concurring in promoving thy salvation and competitours unto God in instant and incessant requests and prayers to save thee; how wouldest thou bee encouraged? (shall I tell thee?) one word out of Christs mouth (who is the *King of Saints*) will doe more then all in Heaven and earth can doe: and what is there then which wee may not hope to obtaine through his Intercession?

And wouldst thou know whe-

Sect. 5. ther he hath undertaken thy cause, and begun to intercede for thee? In a word, Hath he put his spirit into thy heart, and set thy own heart on work to make incessant Intercessions for thy selfe *with groans unutterable*? (as the Apostle hath it, *Rom.* 8.) This is the Eccho of Christs Intercession for thee in heaven.

5. (And lastly) If such a soule shall further object, But will hee not give over suing for me? may I not bee cast out of his prayers through my unbeliefe? Let it here be considered, that hee lives [*ever*] to intercede: And therefore if hee once undertake thy cause, and getteth thee into his prayers, he will never leave thee out night nor day. Hee Intercedeth ever, till he hath accomplisht and finished thy salvation. Men have beene cast out of good and holy mens prayers, as *Saul* out of *Samuels*, and the People of *Israel* out of *Jeremies*; but never out of Christs prayers; the *smoake of his Incense ascends for ever*, and he will intercede to the utmost, till he hath saved them to the uttermost. Hee will never give over, but will lye in the

the dust for thee, or he will perfect and procure thy *Salvation.* Sect. 5.

Onely whilst I am thus raising up your Faith to him upon the worke of his Intercession for us: let me speake a word to you for him, so to stir up your love to him, upon the consideration of this his Intercession also. You see you have the whole life of Christ first & last, both Here and in Heaven laid out for you: He had not come to earth but for you: he had no other businesse here: *Unto us a Son is borne.* And (to be sure) he had not dyed but *for you*: (*for us, a Son was given*) and when he *rose*, it was *for your justification*: And now he is gone to Heaven, he *lives* but to *intercede* for you. He makes your salvation his constant calling. O therefore let us live wholly unto him, for he hath, and doth live wholly unto us. You have his whole time among you; and if he were your servant, you could desire no more. There was much of your time lost before you began to live to him: but there hath beene no moment of his time which hee hath

Sect. 5. hath not lived to, and improved for you. Nor are you able *ever* to live for him, but onely in this life, for hereafter you ſhall live with him, and be glorified of him. I conclude all with that of the Apoſtle, *The love of Chriſt* it ſhould *conſtraine* us, becauſe we cannot but *judge* this to be the moſt equall, that *they which live ſhould not henceforth live unto themſelves, but unto him who dyed for them, and roſe again*; and (out of the Text I alſo adde) *ſits at Gods right hand*, yea, and there *lives for ever to make Interceſſion for us.*

FINIS.

THE HEART OF Christ in Heaven, *TOWARDS* SINNERS on Earth.

OR,

A TREATISE

Demonstrating

The gracious Disposition and tender Affection of *Christ* in his humane Nature now in Glory, unto his Members under all sorts of of *Infirmities*, either of *sin* or *misery*.

By THO: GOODWIN, B.D.

LONDON,
Printed for *Charles Greene*. 1642.

THE TABLE OF The Heart of Christ in HEAVEN, towards Sinners on EARTH.

1. Demonstrations *of the gracious disposition of his Heart towards us.*
   - Extrinsecall, *shewing the* Son, *that it is so.* — Part 1.
   - Intrinsecall, *shewing the* Not, *the Reasons why it must needs be so.* — Part 2.

2. *The* Manner *how his Heart is affected towards us, and the way how it comes to passe that such affections are let into his Heart.* — Part 3.

Part

PART I.

Containing Demonſtrations *Extrinſecall.*

SECT. I.

Demonſtrations from Chriſts carriage at his laſt Farewell, and his laſt Sermon; John, *Chapters*, 13, &c. *and in his laſt prayer*, John 17. *the ſcope of all which was to aſſure his Diſciples of his being conſtant in his affections towards them.* 6

1. *From his carriage at his laſt* Farewell; *and this in foure things.* 7
2. *From many paſſages in that his* laſt Sermon, *in five things.* 18
3. *From his laſt Prayer*, John 17. *which Prayer is a paterne of his interceſſion in Heaven, and ſo an expreſſion of what his Heart is there.* 32

SECT. II.

Demonſtrations *from many paſſages and expreſſions after his* Reſurrection. 35

This Reſurrection his firſt ſtep to his glory; and therefore this a certaine Demonſtration. 36

1. *From the firſt gracious Meſſage which Chriſt after his Reſurrection ſent his Diſciples, who yet had forſaken him.* 37
2. *From his carriage and ſpeech at his firſt meeting with them.* 40

SECT.

SECT. III.

Demonſtrations from paſſages at, *and* after *Chriſts* Aſcenſion *into heaven:*

1. *At his Aſcenſion, his bleſſing his Diſciples.* 49

2. *After he was come to heaven.*

1. *Pouring out his Spirit on them, as in his laſt Sermon he had promiſed, which Spirit is to this day in our Preaching, an Argument of the fulfilling of this.* ib.

2. *All thoſe workes of Miracles, and converſions of ſoules that accompanied the firſt preaching of the Goſpell, do argue this, as alſo the New Teſtament written ſince.* 50

3. *Chriſts owne words ſpoken to* Paul, *ſince himſelfe was in Heaven, do confirme it.* 53

4. *The laſt words uttered in Scripture, in the Booke of the* Revelation, *which was more immediately given unto* John *by* Chriſt. 56

PART. II.

Demonſtrations Intrinſecall.

SECT. I.

The firſt ſort of Intrinſecall *Demonſtrations drawne from the Influence which all the three Perſons have into the Heart of the humane nature of Chriſt in Heaven.* 68

From

1. *From* God the Father. *Which Demonstration is made forth by two things:*
1. *God hath given Christ a perpetuall command to love his Elect on earth, and hath written a Law of love in his heart.* 70
2. *This Law of love remains for ever in his heart, which is proved by two things:*
1. *That it is a* Law, *and that of love.* 75
2. *That by observing that Law it is that Christ continues in his Fathers love.* 76
2. *From* God the Son, *unto whom the humane nature is united. This disposition of grace is* naturall *to him, as he is Gods* naturall Sonne. 77
Accordingly the Humane nature framed on purpose with dispositions of mercy and meekneſſe above all other. 78
3. *From* God the Holy Ghoſt, *who on earth filled him with meekneſſe and grace, above all other dispositions, and now reſteth upon him in heaven, more abundantly then ever.* 87

SECT. II.

A second ſort of Demonſtrations from ſeveral engagements now lying upon Chriſt in Heaven. 101

1. Engagement. *The continuance of all his Relations and Alliances to us, which no glory of his doth any thing lessen or alter.* ibid.

Which Relations were made chiefly for the other world, and so must needs continue there. 104

The ground of this Engagement. 110

2. *His love is engaged and increased, by what he did and suffered for us.* 111

What a great obligation this is. 113

3. *His* Office of Priesthood, *which continues in Heaven, doth further require all mercifulnesse and graciousnesse in him towards us sinners. This Demonstration hath two parts:* 120

The 1. *Shewing that the office of Priesthood was erected on purpose for grace and mercy* ibid.

Which is argued,

1. *By the Ends of it.*
2. *By the qualifications required for it.* 123

The 2. *Shewing that by reason of this office, an eternall duty lieth upon him to shew grace and mercy: and Christ is a faithfull high Priest to perform that duty.* 131

Christs

Christs advancement can make no alteration in his heart, for his Priesthood is his highest advancement:

And Grace did both Found, and now upholds his Throne of grace. 136

4. His owne Intereſt *puts him upon theſe Affections of Heart towards us: His owne Joy, Happineſſe and Glory, are increaſed by ſhewing mercy to, and comforting his children upon Earth: And it is more for his glory then for our good.* 143

Chriſt hath a double fulneſſe of joy.

1. *Perſonall, in his Father.*
2. *Myſticall, in his Members.*

144

How

How Christ rejoyceth in Heaven at well-doing here on earth. 147

5. His having the Nature of Man, *the same for substance in Heaven, that he had on earth, obligeth him to bee mercifull unto men.* 151

The end of his assuming mans Nature, was to qualifie him for mercy. 152

Though it addes not to the greatnesse of mercie in God; yet it addes a new way of being mercifull, *even as a man.* 154

PART. III.

SECT. I.

Some Generals *to cleare,*

1. How this is to bee understood, *That Christs Heart is* touched with the feeling of our infirmities.

2. The way how our infirmities *come to be feelingly let into his heart.* 157

How

1. How this affection in Christ is to be understood,
This explained by these degrees:
1. This affection of compassion is not wholly to be understood in a Metaphoricall sense, as when God is said to be afflicted, &c. that is, not meerly after the similitude of men, but in a true and reall sense. 159
2. These affections in Christs humane nature are more like to ours then those which the Angels have, who notwithstanding have affections analogicall to ours. 163
3. Christ having taken fraile flesh ere he went to Heaven, this fits him yet more for having affections of mercie like unto ours. 165
3. For the way how our miseries are let into Christs heart so as to affect it. This explained by two things.
1. The humane nature hath the knowledge and cognizance of all that can or doth befall us here. 169
2. He remembers how himselfe was once affected when he was under the like. 171

SECT.

SECT. II.

A more particular Diſquiſition what manner of affection this is. The ſeat thereof, whether in his ſpirit or ſoule onely, or in the whole humane nature.

Some cautions added. 174

This affection (for our better conceiving it) ſet forth three wayes.

1. Negatively, *it is not in all things ſuch as it was in the dayes of his fleſh.*
2. Poſitively, *It is yet for ſubſtance the very ſame affection, and the ſeat of it is his bodily heart as well as his ſoule.* 178

Foure Cautions or Poſitions about this.

1. *In what ſenſe, or ſo far as his* Body *is made ſpirituall, ſo far are theſe* Affections ſpiritualized, *as they are in his Body.* 180
2. *Hence, though they move his Bowels, yet they doe not perturbe or hurt him in the leaſt.* 182
3. *All naturall humane affections may be ſtill in him that are not unbecomming his ſtate and glory. And how much the having ſuch affections are ſuteable to that ſtate and relation wherin he is.* 183
4. *Though a paſſionate ſuffering be cut off, yet theſe affections are now more large*

large and ſtrong for the ſubſtance of them, then they were on earth. 187

3. Privately. *If his heart ſuffers not with us under our Infirmities, yet he hath leſſe joy then his heart ſhall have when we are freed from all.* 188

How the Scripture attributes ſome kinde of Imperfection to ſome affection in him, and in what ſenſe.

SECT. III.

This ſcruple ſatisfied, How Chriſts Heart can be feelingly touched with our ſins, (our greateſt infirmities) ſeeing he was tempted [without ſinne.] 191

Foure anſwers given thereunto our comfort.

Uſes of all. 197

FINIS.

THE HEART OF Christ in Heaven, TO Sinners on Earth.

I. Part.

HAving ſet forth our Lord and Saviour *Jeſus Chriſt* in all thoſe great and moſt ſolemne actions of his, his *Obedience* unto *death*, his *Reſurrection*, *Aſcenſion into heaven*, *his ſitting at Gods right hand*, and *Interceſſion* for us, (which of all the other hath

Part. 1. beene more largely insisted on) I shall now annexe (as next in order, and homogeneall thereunto) this Discourse that followes, which layes open *The HEART* of Christ, as now he is in Heaven, sitting at Gods right hand, and interceding for us; *How* it is *affected*, and *graciously disposed* towards sinners on earth that doe come to him; how willing to receive him; how ready to entertain them; how tender to pitty them in all their infirmities, both sinnes and miseries. The scope and use whereof will be this. To hearten and encourage Beleevers to come more boldly to the Throne of Grace, unto such a Saviour and High-priest, when they shall know how sweetly and tenderly his heart (though he is now in his glory) is inclined towards them, & so to remove that great stone of stumbling which we meet with, (and yet lyeth unseene) in the thoughts of men in the way to faith, that Christ being now absent, and withall exalted to so high and infinite a distance of glory, as to *sit at Gods right hand, &c.* they there-

therefore cannot tell how to come Part. 1.
to treat with him about their ſalvation ſo freely, and with that hopefulneſſe to obtaine, as thoſe poore ſinners did, who were here on earth with him: Had our lot beene (thinke they) but to have converſed with him (in the dayes of his fleſh) as *Mary*, and *Peter*, and his other Diſciples did here below, wee could have thought to have beene bold with him, and have beene familiar with him, and to have had any thing at his hands; For they beheld him afore them, a man like unto themſelves, and hee was full of meekneſſe, and gentleneſſe, he being then himſelfe made ſinne, and ſenſible of all ſorts of miſeries; but now hee is gone into a farre Countrey, and hath put on glory and immortality, and how his heart may be altered thereby wee know not. The drift of this Diſcourſe is therefore to aſcertaine poore ſoules that his *Heart* (in reſpect of pitty and compaſſion) remaines the ſame it was on earth; that he intercedes there with the ſame heart he

Part. 1. did here below; and that he is as meeke, as gentle, as easie to be entreated, as tender in his bowells; so that they may deale with him as fairly about the great matter of their salvation, and as hopefully, and upon as easie tearms obtain it of him, as they might if they had beene on earth with him, and be as familiar with him in all their requests, as bold with him in all their needs: Then which nothing can be more for the comfort and encouragement of those, who have given over all other lives but that of faith, and whose souls pursue after strong and entire communion with their Saviour Christ.

Now the *Demonstrations* that may helpe our faith in this, I reduce to two Heads: The first more *extrinsecall* and outward: The second more *intrinsecall* and inward: The one shewing the *that* of it, *that it is so*; the other the *why*, the reasons and grounds *why* it must needs be *so*.

First, for those *Extrinsecall Demonstrations* (as I call them) they are taken from severall passages and carriages of his, in all those severall con-

conditions of his; namely, at his last *Fare-well* afore his *Death*, his *Reſurrection*, *Aſcenſion*, and now he is *ſitting at Gods right hand.* I ſhall lead you through all the ſame Heads which I have gone over in the former Treatiſe (though to another purpoſe) & take ſuch obſervations from his ſpeeches and carriages, in all thoſe ſtates he went through, as ſhall tend directly to perſwade our hearts of the point in hand, namely this, that now *he is in heaven*, his heart remaines as graciouſly inclined to ſinners that come to him, as ever on earth. And for a Ground or Introduction to theſe firſt ſort of *Demonſtrations*, I ſhall take this Scripture that followes; as for thoſe other, another Scripture as proper to that part of this Diſcourſe. Part. 1.

JOHN 13. 1.

—*When Iesus knew that his houre was come, that he ſhould depart out of this world unto the Father, HAVING LOVED HIS OWNE, HEE LOVED THEM TO THE END:* (or) *for ever.*

Sect. I.

Demonſtrations from Chriſts laſt farewell to his Diſciples.

IT was long before that Chriſt did break his mind to his Diſciples, that hee was to leave them, and to go away to heaven from them, (for *Joh.* 16.4. he ſayes, he had forborn *to tell it them from the beginning*:) But when hee begins to acquaint them with it, he then at once leaves with them an abundance of his heart, and

and that not onely how it ſtood towards them, and what it was at the preſent, but what it would be when he ſhould bee in his glory. Let us (to this end) but briefly peruſe his laſt carriage, and his Sermon at his laſt Supper which hee did eat with them, as it is on purpoſe penned and recorded by the Evangeliſt *Iohn*; and we ſhall finde this to be the drift of thoſe long Diſcourſes of Chriſts, from the 13. to the 18. *Chap.* I will not make a Comment on them, but onely briefly take up ſuch ſhort obſervations, as do more ſpecially hold forth this thing in hand. Part. 1.

Theſe words which I have prefixed as the Text, are the Preface unto all that his Diſcourſe that followes (namely, unto that waſhing of his Diſciples feet, and his ſucceeding Sermon) which accordingly doe ſhew the argument and ſumme of all. The Preface is this, [*Before the Feaſt of the Paſſeover, when Ieſus knew that his houre was come, that he ſhould depart out of this world unto the father, having loved his owne which were in the world, hee loved*

1 Demonſtration, from carriage at his laſt farewell.

Part. 1. *loved them unto the end. And supper being ended,——Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, & went to God, he then washed his Disciples feet.*] Now this Preface was prefixed by the Evangelist, on purpose to set open a window into Christs heart, to shew what it was then at his departure, and so withall to give a light into, and put a glosse and interpretation upon all that followes: The scope whereof is to shew what his affections would be to them in Heaven; Hee tells us what Christs *thoughts* were then, and what was his heart amidst those thoughts, (both which occasioned all that succeeds.)

1. He premiseth what was in Christs thoughts & his meditation: He began deeply to consider, both that hee was to depart out of this world, *Jesus knew, &c.* (sayes the Text) that is, was then thinking of it) *that he should depart unto the Father*, and how that then he should shortly be installed into that glory which was due unto him; so it followes, *verse* 3. *Jesus knowing* (that is,

is, was then actually taken into his minde) *that the Father had given all things into his hands*, that is, that all power in Heaven and Earth was his, so soon as he should set footing in Heaven; then in the midst of these thoughts he tells us, he went and washed his Disciples feet, (after he had first considered whither he was to goe, and there, what he was to be.) Part. 1.

But secondly, what was Christs *Heart* most upon, in the midst of all these elevated meditations? Not upon his owne glory so much, (though it is told us that he considered that, thereby the more to set out his love unto us) but upon these thoughts his *Heart* ranne out in love towards, and was set upon *his owne*, *Having loved his owne*, saies the first *verse* [τοὺς ἰδίους, *his owne*] (a word denoting the greatest nearnesse, dearnesse, and intimatenesse founded upon propriety:) The Elect are Christs owne, a piece of himselfe, not [τὰ ἴδια] as goods, (*John* 1.11. *Hee came unto* [*his owne*] *and* [*his owne*] *received him not*; [τὰ ἴδια] the

Part. 1. word ſhewes that he reckons them *his owne* but as goods, not as perſons) but he calls theſe her τοὺς ἰδίους, his owne by a nearer propriety, that is, his owne *children*, his owne *members*, his owne *wife*, his owne *fleſh*: and he conſiders, that though he was to goe out of the world, yet they were to be in the world; and therefore it is on purpoſe added, *which were in the world*, that is, to remaine in this world. He had others of his owne who were in that world unto which he was going, even the *ſpirits of juſt men made perfect*, (whom as yet he had never ſeene.) One would thinke, that when he was meditating upon his going out of this world, his heart ſhould bee all upon *Abraham*, his *Iſaacs*, and his *Iacobs*, whom hee was going to; no hee takes more care for his owne, who were to remaine here in this world, a *world* wherein there is much *evill*, (as himſelfe ſaies, *Iohn* 17.15.) both of ſinne and miſery, and with which, themſelves whilſt in it, could not but be defiled and vexed. This ist i which drawes out his bowells

wells towards them, even at that time when his heart was full of the thoughts of his owne glory: *Having loved his owne, he loved them unto the end.* Which is ſpoken, to ſhew the conſtancie of his love, and what it would be when Chriſt ſhould be in his glory, [*To the end*] that is, to the *perfection* of it, εἰς τελείωσιν, ſayes *Chryſoſtome*: having begunne to love them, he will perfect and conſummate his love to them. And *to the end*, that is; [*for ever*;] So in the Greeke εἰς τέλος is ſometimes uſed, and ſo by the Evangeliſt the phraſe is here uſed in a ſutableneſſe to the Scripture phraſe, *Pſ.* 103.9. *He will not alwaies chide, nor reſerve anger* [*for ever*;] ſo we tranſlate it, but in the Originall, *He reſerves not anger* [*unto the end.*] So that the ſcope of this ſpeech is to ſhew how Chriſts heart and love would bee towards them even *for ever*, when hee ſhould bee gone unto his Father, as well as it was to ſhew how it had beene here on earth; they being his *owne*, and hee *having loved* them, hee alters, he changes not, and Part. 1.

Part. 1. and therefore will love them for ever.

And then thirdly, to testifie thus much by a reall testimony, what his love would be, when in Heaven to them, the Evangelist shewes, that when hee was in the middest of all those great thoughts of his approaching glory, and of the Soveraigne estate which hee was to be in, he then tooke water and a towell, and washed his Disciples feet. This to have been his scope will appeare, if you observe but the coherence in the second verse, it is said, that *Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands*, then (verse 4.) *he riseth from supper, and layes aside his garments, and tooke a towell and girded himselfe*; (verse 5.) after that, *hee powred water into a bason, and began to wash his Disciples feet, &c.* where it is evident that the Evangelists scope is to hold forth this unto us, that then when Christs thoughts were full of his glory, and when he tooke in the consideration of it unto the utmost; even then and upon that occasion, and in the midst of those

thoſe thoughts, he waſht his Diſciples feet; And what was Chriſts meaning in this, but that, whereas when hee ſhould bee in heaven, hee could not make ſuch outward viſible demonſtrations of his heart, by doing ſuch meane ſervices for them; therefore by doing this in the middeſt of ſuch thoughts of his glory, he would ſhew what he could bee content (as it were) to doe for them, when hee ſhould be in full poſſeſſion of it? (ſo great is his love unto them.) There is another expreſſion of Chriſts like unto this, in *Luke* 12.36,37. which confirms this to be his meaning here, and to be his very heart in heaven. At *ver.* 36. he compares himſelfe to a *Bridegroome*, who is to goe to Heaven unto a wedding-feaſt; who hath ſervants on Earth that ſtand all that while here below, as without, waiting for him; at which, becauſe they wait ſo long, they may thinke much, Chriſt adds, *Verily I ſay unto you, that when the Bridegroome returns* (refreſhed with wine and gladneſſe) *he ſhall gird himſelfe, and make them ſit down to meat;* Part. 1.

and

Part. 1. *and will come forth and [serve them.]* The meaning is not as if that Christ ſerved at the latter day, or now in heaven, thoſe that ſit downe there; but onely it is an abundant expreſſion in words, as here, in a real inſtance to ſet forth the over-flowing love that is in his heart, & the tranſcendent happineſſe that we ſhall then enjoy, even beyond what can be expected by us, (he utters himſelfe therefore by an unwonted thing not heard of, that the Lord ſhould ſerve his ſervants, and wait on them that waited for him.) And it is to ſhew his heart to them, and what he could be contented to doe for them. So that you ſee what his heart was before he went to Heaven, even amidſt the thoughts of all his glory; and you ſee what it is after hee hath beene in Heaven, and greatned with all his glory, even content to waſh poore Sinners feete, and to ſerve them that come to him and wait for him.

Now fourthly, what was the myſtery of this his *waſhing their feet?* It was, as to give them an example of-

of mutuall love and humility, ſo to ſignifie his waſhing away their ſinnes: thus *ver.* 8. and 10. himſelfe intreprets it. It is true indeed, that now he is in Heaven, he cannot come to waſh the feet of their bodies, but he would ſignifie thus much thereby, that thoſe ſinners that will come to him when in his glory, he will waſh away all their ſins: *Hee loved his Church, and gave himſelfe for it, that he might ſanctifie and cleanſe it with the* [*waſhing of water,*] *that hee might preſent it to himſelfe a glorious Church, not having ſpot or wrinkle, &c.* Epheſ. 5. 25, 26, 27. Part. 1.

This *ſpecimen* or Declaration of his minde, we have from this his carriage, at this his laſt farewell. Let us next take a ſurvey of the drift of that long Sermon which hee made at that his farewell, and we ſhall finde the maine ſcope of it to be further to aſſure his Diſciples of what his heart would be unto them, and that will make a ſecond Demonſtration.

It were too long a work to inſiſt upon each particular: but certainly, no

a. From many paſſages in that laſt Sermon.

Part. 1. no loving Husband ever endeavoured more to satisfie the heart of his Spouse during his absence, then Christ doth his Disciples hearts, and in them, all Beleevers: (For take that along, once for all, that what Christ said unto them, hee sayes unto us, as in that 17. of *John* that speech implies, *I pray not for them onely, but for those also that shall beleeve through their word.*) And as what hee prayed for them was for all Beleevers also, so what hee then spake unto them.

First, he lets them see what his heart would be unto them, and how mindefull of them when in heaven, by that *businesse* which hee professeth he went thither to perform for them: concerning which, observe first, that he lovingly acquaints them with it afore-hand what it is, which argued care and tenderneſſe, as from an husband unto a wife it doth; And withall, how plaine heartedly doth he speake, as one that would not hide any thing from them? *Joh.* 16. 7. *I tell you the truth* of it, (sayes he) *it is expedient*

(and

(and expedient) *for you that I goe away*. And ſecondly, he tels them, it is wholly for them and their happineſſe; *I goe to ſend you a Comforter*, whilſt you are in this world, and *to prepare a place for you*, (*John* 14. 2.) when you ſhall goe out of this world: *There are many manſions in my Fathers houſe*, and I goe to take them up for you, and to keep your places for you till you come. And there againe, how openly and candidly doth he ſpeak to them? *If it had been otherwiſe*, (ſayes he) I *would have told you*: you may beleeve me, I would not deceive you for all the glory in that place to which I am a going. Whom would not this openneſſe and nakedneſſe of heart perſwade? But then thirdly; the buſineſſe it ſelfe being ſuch as is ſo much for us and our happineſſe; how much more doth that argue it? And indeed Chriſt himſelfe doth fetch from thence an arguement of the countenance of his love to them. So *v.* 3. *If go to prepare a place for you*, (if that be my errand) then doubt not of my love when I am there; All the glory of the place ſhal never make Part. 1.

Part. 1. make me forget my busineſſe. When he was on earth, he forgot none of the buſineſſe for which he came into the World: Shall I *not doe my Fathers buſineſſe?* (ſaid he, when hee was a childe) yes, and he did it to the utmoſt, by *fulfilling all righteouſneſſe.* Surely therefore he will not forget any of that buſineſſe which he is to doe in heaven, it being the more pleaſant worke by far. And (as I ſhewed in the former diſcourſe, out of *Heb.*6.20.) *He is entred as a forerunner*, an Harbinger, to take up places there for us, and if he could forget us, yet our names are all written in heaven round about him, and are continually afore his eyes written there, not onely by Gods election, ſo *Heb.*12.23. *Ye are come to mount Sion, and to the heavenly Jeruſalem, and to the Church of the firſt-borne* [*which are written in Heaven;*] *and to Ieſus, and to the blood of ſprinkling, &c.* But Chriſt himſelfe ſcores them up anew with his blood over every manſion there, which he takes up for any. Yea, he carrieth their names written in his heart, as the High-prieſt did the names of the ten

ten Tribes on his breaſt, when hee entred into the Holy of Holies. He ſits in heaven to ſee to it, that none other ſhould take their roomes over their heads, (as we ſay.) And therefore 1 *Pet.* 1.4. Salvation is ſaid to *be reſerved in Heaven for them*, that is, kept on purpoſe for them by Jeſus Chriſt. The evill Angels had places there once, but they were diſpoſed of unto others over their heads, as the Land of *Canaan* was from the *Canaanites*; the reaſon of which was, becauſe they had not a Chriſt there to intercede for them, as we have. Part. 1.

Then ſecondly, to manifeſt his mindefulneſſe of them, and of all beleevers elſe, when he ſhould be in his glory, he tels them that when he hath diſpatched that buſineſſe for them, and made Heaven ready for them, and all the elect that are to come, that then he meanes to come again to them: So *Chap.* 14. *v.* 3. *If I goe and prepare a place for you, I will come again*, which is a meere expreſſion of love, for he if he had pleaſed he might have ordered it to have ſent for them to him, but *he meanes*

to

Part. 1. *to come for them himselfe*, and this when he is warme (as we speake) and in the height and midst of his glory in Heaven, yet he will for a time leave it to come againe unto his Spouse: And what is it for? 1. To see her; [*I will see you again,*] & your heart shal rejoice. 2. To fetch her; So *Joh.* 14. 3. *I will come again and receive you to my selfe.* He condescends to the very lawes of Bridegroomes; (for notwithstanding all his greatnesse, no lover shal put him down in any expression of true love.) It is the manner of Bridegroomes, when they have made all ready in their fathers house, then to come themselves and fetch their Brides, and not to send for them by others, because it is a time of love. Love descends better then ascends; and so doth the love of Christ, who indeed is love it selfe; and therefore comes down to us himself: *I wil come again & receive you unto my self*, saies Christ, *that so where I am you may be also.* That last part of his speech gives the reason of it, and withall bewrayes his entire affection: It is as if he had said, the truth is, I cannot live

live without you; I ſhall never bee quiet till I have you where I am, that ſo we may never part againe, (that is the reaſon of it.) Heaven ſhall not hold me, nor my Fathers company, if I have not you with me, my heart is ſo ſet upon you: and if I have any glory you ſhall have part of it. So *ver.* 19. *Becauſe I live, you ſhall live alſo.* It is a reaſon, and it is halfe an oath beſides; [*As I live*] is Gods oath; [*Becauſe I live*] ſayes Chriſt; He pawnes his life upon it, and deſires to live upon no other tearmes; [*Hee ſhall live to ſee his ſeed, &c. Eſay* 53.] And yet further, the more to expreſſe the workings and longings of his heart after them all that while, hee tells them, it ſhall not be long neither ere he doth come againe to them. So John 16. 16. *Againe a little while and ye ſhall ſee me; a little while and ye ſhall not ſee me* (ſayes hee.) Which [not ſeeing him] refers not to that ſmall ſpace of abſence whilſt dead and in the grave; but of that after his laſt aſcending, forty dayes after his Reſurrection, when he ſhould goe away, not to be ſeen on earth Part. 1.

Part. 1. earth again untill the day of Judgement; and yet from that Ascension *but a litt'e while* (saies he) *and you shall see mee againe*; namely at the day of Judgement. It is said, *Heb.* 10. 37. *Yet a little while and he that shall come, will come, and will not tary.* The words in the Greeke are, [ἔτι γὰρ μικρὸν ὅσον ὅσον ὁ ἐρχόμενος ἥξει.] *A little little as may bee*: Though long for the time in it selfe, yet as little while as may be in respect of his desire, without the least delaying to come: He will stay not a moment longer, then till he hath dispatcht all our businesse there for us. And then the doubling of the phrase, ὁ ἐρχόμενος ἥξει, (*Veniens, venit, Comming he will come*) implyes vehemencie of desire to come, and that his minde is alwaies upon it; he is still *a comming*; he can hardly be kept away. Thus the Hebrew phrase likewise signifies an urgencie, vehemencie, and intensenesse of some act; as [*Expecting I have expected*; *Desiring I have desired*;] so [*Comming he will come*:] and as not content with these expressions of desire, he adds over and above all these,

theſe, [*And will not tarry,*] and all to ſignifie the infinite ardency of his minde towards his Elect here below, and to have all his Elect in heaven about him. He will not ſtay a minute longer then needs muſt; he tarries onely till he hath throughout all Ages by his Interceſſion prepared every room for each Saint, that he may entertaine them all at once together, and have them all about him. Part. 1.

Thirdly, what his heart would be towards them in his abſence, he expreſſeth by the carefull proviſion he makes and the order he takes for their comfort in his abſence. John 16. 18. *I will not leave you as Orphanes*, (ſo the word is) I will not leave you like fatherleſſe and friendleſſe children at ſixes and ſevens. My Father and I have but one onely friend who lyes in the boſome of us both, and proceedeth from us both, the holy Ghoſt, and in the meane time I will ſend him to you. Doing herein as a loving Husband uſeth to doe in his abſence, even commit his Wife to the deareſt friend he hath; ſo doth Chriſt.

Part. 1. Christ, *ver.* 16. I *will pray the Father,* (sayes he) *and he shall give you another Comforter;* and *ch.* 16. 7. he saith, I *will send him to you.* Who

First, shall be a better Comforter unto you then I am to be in this kind of dispensation, (which whilst I am on earth, I am bound up towards you in.) So in that 16. of Joh. *ver.* 7. he intimates, *it is expedient* (sayes he) *that* I *goe away; for if* I *goe not away, the Comforter will not come*; who by reason of his office, will comfort you better then I should doe with my bodily presence. And this Spirit, as he is the *earnest of Heaven*, (as the Apostle speakes) so he is the greatest token and pledge of Christs love that ever was; and such a one as *the world cannot receive.*

And yet secondly, all the comfort he shall speake to you all that while, wil be but from the expression of my heart towards you: For as he comes not of himselfe, but I *must send him*, (John 16. 7.) so *hee will speake nothing of himselfe*, but *whatsoever he shall heare, that shall he speak*, (*ver.* 13.) And *ver.* 14. hee sayes,

He

He shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you. Him therefore I shall send on purpose to be in my roome, and to execute my place to you my Bride, Spouse, and he shall tell you, (if you wil listen to him, and not grieve him) nothing but stories of my love: So it is there, *He shall glorifie me*, namely, to you, (for I am in my selfe already glorified in heaven.) All his speech in your hearts will be to advance me, and to greaten my worth and love unto you; and it will be his delight to doe it: And he can come from Heaven in an instant when he will, and bring you fresh tidings of my minde, and tell you the thoughts I last had of you, even at that very minute when I am thinking of them, what they are at the very time wherein he tells you them. (And therefore in that 1 *Cor.* 2. by *having the Spirit*, *ver.* 12. wee are said to *have the minde of Christ*, *ver. ult.*) For he dwelleth in Christs heart, and also ours, and lifts up from one hand to the other what Christs thoughts are to us, and what our prayers and faith are to Christ.) Part. 1.

Part. 1. So that you shall have my heart as surely and as speedily as if I were with you; and he will continually be breaking your hearts, either with my love to you, or yours to me, or both; and if either, you may be sure of my love thereby. And whereas (sayes he) you have the Spirit now in your hearts, so *ver.*17. of *Chap.*14 [*He now dwels in you,*] yet after my Ascention *hee shall be* in a further measure *in you,* as it followes there: And *at that day* (ver.20.) *you shall know* (namely, by his Dictate) *that I am in my Father, and you in me, and* I *in you:* He will tell you when I am in Heaven, that there is as true a conjunction betweene me and you, and as true a deareneſſe of affection in mee towards you, as is betweene my Father and me; and that it is as impoſſible to breake this knot, and to take off my heart from you, as my Fathers from me, and mine from my Father.

And then thirdly, you shall be sure, that what he sayes of my love to you, is true, *for he is the Spirit of truth, Chap.*16.*ver.*13. as also *Chap.* 14.

14. *ver.* 16, 17. (which Christ speaks of him as he is a Comforter.) And as you beleeve me when I tell you of my Father, because I come from him, so you may beleeve him in all that hee sayes of mee, and of my love to you, for hee comes from me. Part. 1.

Ay but might they say; Will not he also leave us for a time; as you have done? No, sayes Christ, *Chap.* 14. 16. *The Father shall give you another Comforter, and he shall abide with you for ever:* Christ speaks it in opposition to himselfe; Hee himselfe had beene a Comforter unto them, but he was now to bee absent, but not so the Spirit; *Hee shall be with you for ever:* and as hee is *now with you*, so he *shall be in you*, ver. 17.

In the fourth place, if this be not enough to assure them how his heart would bee affected towards them, hee assures them hee will give them daily experience of it. Do but trie mee (sayes hee) when I am gone, and that by sending mee word upon all occasions, what you would have mee to doe for you,

Part. 1. (and I have left my Spirit to bee your Secretary, and the Enditer of all your Petitions) *Hitherto you have asked nothing* (that is, little) *in my name*, (he blames them that they have asked him no more to doe for them) *but now aske and you shall receive.* And if otherwise you will not believe yet you shall believe your own eyes; aske and you shall see your selves answered presently. *Beleeve* and so *Beleeve me* (saies he) *for the very workes sake*, *John* 14. 11. He speakes it of the workes hee would doe for them, in answer to their prayers when he was gone; which should be as so many Epistles of his heart, returned in answer unto theirs: For it follows, *ver.* 12. *He that beleeveth in me shall doe greater workes then I, because I go to my Father.* So that it is manifest, he speakes of the workes done after his Ascension. And how were they to get and procure them to bee done? By Prayer; so it follows, *ver.* 13. *And whatsoever you shall aske in my name, that will I doe.* He speaks it of the time when he is gone: And again, he saies in *ver.* 14. *If you shall*

aske

aske any thing in my name, I will do it. Part. 1.
Let me but heare from you, be it every weeke, every day, every houre, you shall be sure of an answer, (*Open your mouthes wide, and I will fill them*.) And those your Prayers shall be as continuall tokens both of your hearts towards me, and my answers shall be the like of mine to you. And because Christ bids them direct (their Letters) their Prayers to the Father, only to send them in his name, as *John* 16.23. and so they might perhaps not so clearly know and discern that his heart was in the answer to them, but his Fathers hand only, therefore he adds twice in the 14. of *John*, [*I will do it, I will do it.*] He speaks like one as forward to do for them, as his Father is or should be; and as desirous to have them know and take notice of his hand in it: And it is as if hee had said, Though you aske the Father in my name, yet all comes through my hands, and I *will doe it*: there must be my hand to the warrant for every thing that is done, and my heart shall not be wanting.

In the fifth place, yet further to

Part. 1. evidence his love, he not only bids them thus to pray to him, and in his name upon all occasions, but he assureth them, that he himselfe will pray for them: and observe but the manner of his telling them this; it is in the most insinuating, perswasive expressions to convey his heart in to them, that men use to utter, when they would intimate the deepest care and purpose to doe a thing. *Chap.* 16.26. *At that day* (namely, after his Ascension) *ye shall aske, &c.* (sayes he) *& I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you;* no, not I. (I mentioned it afore, I will but adde this illustration to it.) It is such a speech as men use, when they would expresse the greatest reason that another hath, to rest confident and assured of their love: [*I do not love you, no not* I.] It is an expressing a thing by its contrary, which is most emphaticall. As when we say of a man, that hath the greatest good turne done him that can be, [You are shrewdly hurt:] It is such an expression as *Paul* used to the *Corinthians:* I converted your souls when you thought not of it; I

caught

taught you with guile, [forgive mee this wrong.] So sayes Christ here, I *say not that I will pray for you,* when the truth is, that it is the chiefest worke that he doth in Heaven; *He lives ever to intercede:* as hee ever lives, so to intercede ever, and never to hold his peace till sinners are saved. (But *the worke of Christ in heaven* is a subject deserves and will take up a distinct and large discourse: I will therefore speake no more of it now) neither will I mention any more particulars out of this his Sermon. Read but over those 3. Chapters, (the 14,15, and 16.) for in them you have the longest Sermon of his that is recorded: and he stood the longest upon this theme, of any other, because indeed his heart was more in it, then in any point that he ever preached on. Part. 1.

Onely if any object and say, He spake all this to his Disciples, to quiet and pacifie them, and so, more in respect to their trouble, then otherwise hee would have spoken.

In the sixt place, read but the next Chapter, (the seventeenth)

Part. 1. and you shall see, that he presently goes apart and alone to his Father, and speaks over all againe unto him, that which he had said unto them. He saies as much behinde their backes *of them*, as he had said before their faces to them. Read it, and you will finde that he was the same absent, that present with them: He was therefore not only hearty in what he had said, but his heart was full of it. That Chapter (you know) containes a Prayer put up just before his suffering, and there he makes his Will, and his last request, for in such a stile it runs, [*Father I will*] ver. 24. which Will hee is gone to see executed in Heaven. And *Arminius* said true in that, that that this Prayer is left us by Christ, as a summary of his intercession for us in Heaven; he spake as he meant to doe in Heaven, and as one that had done his worke, and was now come to demand his wages; [*I have finished thy work* (saies he ver. 4.) *&c.*] And whereas he speaks a word or two for himself, (in the first five verses) he speakes five times as many for them, for all the rest of the

Chap-

Chapter is a Prayer for them. He uſeth all kinde of arguments to move his Father for his children: *I have finiſhed the worke which thou gaveſt me to doe*, (ſaies he) and to ſave them is thy worke, which remaines to be done for me by thee: and *they are thine, and thou gaveſt them me*; and I commend to thee but thine owne. *And all mine are thine, and thine are mine*; He inſinuates, that he of himſelfe had not added a man, but uſeth all his intereſt only for thoſe that the Father had given him: (and what a motive is this?) and he profeſſeth he will not open his mouth for a man more: I *pray not for the world*, ſayes he, I will not open my lips for any one ſonne of perdition; but I employ all my Bloud, my Prayers, and my whole intereſt with thee, but for thoſe thy ſelfe haſt given me. And (ſaies he) though thou haſt given me a perſonall glory which I had before the world was; yet there is another glory which I account of almoſt as much, and that is in their being ſaved; I *am glorified in them*, ſayes he, *ver.* 10. *and they are my joy*;

Part. 1.

Part. 1. (*ver.*13.) and therefore, I must have them *with me where ever* I *am:* (ver. 24.) Thou hast set my heart upon them, and hast loved them thy selfe, as thou hast loved me, and thou hast ordained them to be one in us, even as *we are one*, and therefore I cannot live long asunder from them: I have thy company, but I must have theirs too; I *will that they be where* I *am*, ver. 24. If I have any glory; they must have part of it: So it follows in the fore-named verse [*That they may behold the glory which thou hast given me,*] hee speakes all this as if hee had beene then in Heaven, and in possession of all that glory, and therefore it is an expression of his heart in Heaven, which you have very good ground to build upon.

Sect.

Sect. II.

Demonſtrations from paſſages and expreſſions after his Reſurrection.

THeſe Demonſtrations have beene taken from his carriage and Sermon before his death, even at his firſt breaking of his minde unto his Diſciples concerning his departure from them. Let us now take a view of our Saviour in his behaviour after his *Reſurrection*; whence a futher *Indicium* of his heart, how it would ſtand towards ſinners when he ſhould bee in Heaven, may be taken, and his love demonſtrated. For his Reſurrection was the firſt ſtep unto his Glory, and indeed an entrance into it; when he had laid downe his body, he laid down all earthly weakneſſes, and paſſions of fleſh and blood. *It was ſowne* (as ours is) *in weakneſſe*; but with raiſing of it up again, he took on him the diſpoſitions and qualifications of an immortall and glorious body, *It was raiſed in power.* And *The dayes of his fleſh* (or fraile eſtate) as the Author

Part. 1. Author to the Hebrews, by way of distinction speakes, were past and over at his Resurrection: and the garment of his body was new dyed, and endowed with new qualities: & thereby it was made of a stuffe fit to bear and sustain Heavens Glory: and therefore, what now his heart upon his first rising shall appeare to be towards us, will be a certaine demonstration, what it will continue to be in Heaven. And to illustrate this the more, consider, that if ever there were a triall taken, whether his love to sinners would continue or no; it was then at his Resurrection, for all his Disciples, especially *Peter*, had carryed themselves the most unworthily towards him in that interim, that could bee, and this then when hee was performing the greatest act of love towards them, (namely, dying for them) that ever was shewne by any. (And by the way, so God often orders it, that when he is in hand with the greatest mercies for us, and bringing about our greatest good, then wee are most of all sinning against him, which hee doth

doth to magnifie his love the more.) Part. 1.
You know how they all forsooke him, and in the midst of his Agonie in the Garden, (in which he desired their company, meerely for a reliefe unto their sadded spirit) they slept and lay like so many blocks, (utterly senslesse of his dolours) which had they had any friendly sympathy of, they could never have done; [*Could you not watch with mee one houre?*] Then you know, how foulely *Peter* denyed him with oathes and curses; and after that, when hee was laid in the grave, they are giving up all their faith in him, *We trusted it should have beene he* (say two of them) *that should have redeemed Israel*: They question, whether he was the Messiah or no, *Luke* 24. 21. Now when Christ came first out of the other world, from the dead, cloathed with that heart and body which he was to weare in Heaven, what message sends he first to them? we would all thinke, that as they would not know him in his sufferings, so hee would now be as strange to them in his glory: or at least, his first

words

Part. 1. words shall be to rate them for their faithlesnesse and falshood: but here is no such matter, for *John* 20. 17. his first word concerning them is, *Goe tell my Brethren, &c.* You read elsewhere how that it is made a great point of love and condescending in Christ so to entitle them, *Heb.* 2. 11. [*He is not ashamed to call them Brethren*] (surely his brethren had been ashamed of him:) Now for him to call them so when he was first entring into his glory, argues the more love in him towards them. He carries it as *Joseph* did in the height of his advancement, when he first brake his mind to his brethren; *I am Joseph your brother* (sayes he, *Gen* 45. 4.) So Christ sayes here, *Tell them* you have seen *Jesus* their *Brother*, I own them as brethren still. This was his first compellation; but what was the message he would first have delivered to them? that I (sayes he) *ascend to my Father, and your Father.* A more friendly speech by farre, and arguing infinite more love then that of *Josephs* did (though that was full of bowels) for *Joseph* after hee

he had told them he was their brother, adds, [*whom you sold into Egypt,*] he minds them of their unkindnesse, but not so Christ, not a word of that, he minds them not of what they had done against him. Poore sinners who are full of the thoughts of their owne sins, know not how they shall be able at the latter day to look Christ in the face when they shal first meet with him: But they may relieve their spirits against their care and feare, by Christs carriage now towards his Disciples, who had so sinned against him: Be not afraid, *your sins will he remember no more.* Yea, further, you my observe, that he minds them, not so much of what he had been doing for them; He sayes not, Tell them I have been dying for them, or, that they little think what I have suffered for them; not a word of that neither: but still his heart and his care is upon doing more; he looks not backward to what is past, but forgets his sufferings, as *a woman her travail, for joy that a man-child is borne.* Having now dispacht that great work on earth for them, Part. 1.

Part. 1. them, he haſtens to Heaven as faſt as he can to doe another: And though hee knew hee had buſineſſe yet to doe upon earth, that would hold him forty dayes longer; yet to ſhew that his heart was longing, and eagerly deſirous to be at work for them in heaven, he ſpeakes in the preſent tenſe, and tels them, *I aſcend*; and he expreſſeth his joy to be, not onely that he *goes to his Father*, but alſo that he goes to *their Father*, to bee an advocate with him for them; of which I ſpake afore. And is indeed Jeſus our Brother alive? and doth he call us Brethren? and doth he talke thus lovingly of us? (whoſe heart would not this overcome?)

But this was but a meſſage ſent his Diſciples, before he met them; let us next obſerve his carriage and ſpeech at firſt meeting together: When he came firſt amongſt them, this was his ſalutation, *Peace be to you, verſe* 19. which he reiterates, *verſe* 21. and it is all one with that former ſpeech of his uſed in that his parting Sermon, [*My peace I leave with you.*] After this hee breathes

breathes on them, and conveyes the *holy Ghost* in a further measure into them, so to give an evidence of what he would doe yet more plentifully in Heaven: and the mystery of that his *breathing on them*, was to shew that this was the utmost expression of his heart, to give them the Spirit, and that it came from the very bottome of it, as a mans breath doth, as well as that the holy Ghost proceeds from him, as well as from the Father, (which was also the meaning of it.) And to what end doth he give them the Spirit? not for themselves alone; but that they by the gifts and assistance of that Spirit might *forgive mens sinnes* by converting them to him, [*Whose sinnes soever ye remit*, (namely, by your Ministry) *they are remitted to them:*] His minde you see is still upon sinners, and his care for the conversion of their soules. And therefore in another Evangelist, (namely *Mark*) his last words recorded are these: *Goe ye into all the World, and preach the Gospell unto every creature, and he that beleeveth shall be saved, &c. Chap.* 16. 15. Part. 1.

And

Part. 1. And in *Luke*, Chapter 24. Verse 46, 47. his last words on earth there recorded are, [*Thus it behoved Christ to suffer and to rise, — that repentance and remission of sinnes should bee preached among all Nations.* And addes, *beginning at Hierusalem*, where he had beene but a few dayes before crucified. Of all places, one would have thought he would have excepted that, and have charged them to passe by it, but hee bids them beginne there: let them have the first fruit and benefit by my death, that were the actors in it. And (to that end) he also sayes, *Behold, I send you the Promise of my Father, &c. ver.* 49. Another time he appeares to two of them, and then indeed he rates them, saying, *O ye fooles, and slow of heart*; but for what is it? but onely because they would not beleeve on him, for no other sin, not for that they had forsaken him: so it followes, *O yee fooles, and slow of heart to beleeve, &c. Luke* 24. 25. and this because he is glad when wee beleeve, as *Iohn* 11. 15. And after that, he appeares to all the eleven, and

and *upbraids* them, (the Text sayes) but with what? with their *unbeliefe* and *hardnesse of heart*; still because they *believed not*, so *verse* 14. No sinne of theirs troubled him but their *unbeliefe*: Which shews how his heart stands, in that he desires nothing more, then to have men beleeve in him; and this, now when glorified. Afterwards hee meets with *Thomas*, and scarce chides him for his grosse unbeliefe; onely tels him, it was well that *having seene, he believed*; but pronounceth them more *blessed, who though they have not seene, yet beleeve:* and so he is reproved, *Iohn* 20. 29. Another time hee shewes himselfe to his Disciples, and particularly deales with *Peter*, but yet tels him not a word of his sins, nor of his forsaking of him, but onely goes about to draw from him a testimony of his love to himselfe, *Peter*, (sayes he) *loveſt thou me?* Christ loves to heare that note; full well doe those words sound in his eares, when you tell him, you love him, though he knowes it already, as *Peter* tels him, *thou knoweſt all things,* Part. 1.

thou

Part. 1. *thou knowest* I *love thee*, *John* 21.15. and this Christ puts him thrice upon. And what was Christs aime in drawing this acknowlegement of love from *Peter* to him, but only to put an engagement upon *Peter*, that if he loved him as he professed, and would ever shew it, then to *feed his lambs*? This is the great testimony that he would have *Peter* to shew his love in, when he should be in Heaven; and this is the last charge he gives him: Which how great a testimony is it, to shew how his owne heart was affected, and what his greatest care was upon? His heart runs altogether upon his Lambs, upon soules to be converted; He had said afore, *Sheep* I *have*, *John* 10. 6. *which are not of this fold*, *them* I *must bring in*: (and he left his Apostles to doe it) but this here was a more moving and affectionate expression; for sheepe can shift for themselves, but poor little Lambes cannot: Therefore Christ sayes unto *Peter*, *Feed my Lambes*, (even as *John*, to expresse the more love unto those hee writes to, calls them *My little children*.)

And

And to what end doth the Evangelist record these things of him after his Resurrection? One of the Evangelists that recorded them, informs us; In the 20. of *John*, v. 30. it is said, that *Jesus did many other signes*, namely after his Resurrection: (for in the middest of the story of those things done after his Resurrection he speakes it,) *which are not written in this Booke*, (but partly recorded by other Evangelists, and partly concealed) *but these things are written that ye might beleeve that Jesus is the Christ*, that is, that so you might come to him as to the *Messiah*, the Saviour of the World: and therefore, the most of the things recorded tend to shew Christs heart and carriage towards Sinners, that so we might beleeve on him, and that *beleeving we might have life through his Name.* Part. 1.

Sect. 3.

Sect. 3.

Demonstrations from passages at and after his Ascension *into Heaven.*

LEt us view him next in his very ascending, his carriage then also will further assure our hearts of this. *Luke* 24. 50. it is said, *He lifted up his hands and blessed them*: and to put the greater emphasis upon it, and that we might the more observe it, as having some great mystery in it, *ver.* 51. it is added, [*And whilst hee blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into Heaven.*] This benediction Christ reserved to bee his last act; and what was the meaning of it, but (as I have before shewne) to blesse them, as God blessed *Adam* and *Eve*, bidding them *Encrease and multiply*, and so blessing all Man-kind that were to come of them? Thus doth Christ in blessing his Disciples, blesse all those that shall believe through their word unto the end of the world. I only adde this to the illustration of it; this mystery is interpreted

preted by *Peter*, *Acts* 3. 26. when Part. 1.
ſpeaking to the Jews, he ſayes, *Unto you firſt, God having raiſed up his Sonne Ieſus, ſent him* [*to bleſſe you,*] (and how?) *in turning away every one of you from his iniquities,* and ſo, forgiving of them; (for, *Bleſſed is the man whoſe ſin is forgiven.*) Thus at his aſcending.

In the next place, let us conſider what Chriſt did when he was come to heaven and exalted there: how abundantly did he there make good all that he had promiſed in his laſt Sermon? For Firſt, hee inſtantly powred out his Spirit, and that *richly*, (as the Apoſtle to *Titus* ſpeaks) and he *being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promiſe of the holy Ghoſt, he hath ſhed forth this which you now ſee and hear*, ſayes the Apoſtle in his firſt Sermon after, *Acts* 2.33. he then received it, and viſibly powred him out. So *Epheſ.* 4. 8. it is ſaid, *He aſcended up on high, and gave gifts unto men,* —— *for the work of the Miniſtery* (ver. 15.) and *for the joyntings in of the Saints to the encreaſe of the body of Chriſt*, (*v.* 16.) that is, for

the

Part. 1. the converting of elect ſinners, and making them Saints. And the gifts there mentioned (ſome of them) remaine unto this day, in *Paſtors and Teachers, &c.* And this ſpirit is ſtill in our preaching, and in your hearts in hearing, in praying, &c and perſwades you of Chriſts love to this very day; and is in all theſe, the pledge of the continuance of Chriſts love ſtill, in Heaven unto ſinners. All our Sermons and your Prayers are evidences to you, that Chriſts heart is ſtill the ſame towards ſinners, that ever it was; for the Spirit that aſſiſts in all theſe, comes in his name, and in his ſtead, and workes all by commiſſion from him. And doe none of you feele your hearts moved in the preaching of theſe things, at this and other times? and who is it that moves you? is it the Spirit who ſpeakes in Chriſts name from Heaven, even as himſelfe is ſaid to *ſpeake from heaven*, Heb. 12. 25. And when you pray, it is the Spirit that endites your prayers, & that *makes interceſſion for you* in your own hearts, Rom. 8. 26, which Interceſſion of his is but

the

the evidence and eccho of Christs Intercession in Heaven. The Spirit prayes in you, because Christ prayes for you: Hee is an Intercessor on earth, because Christ is an intercessor in heaven. As hee did take off Christs words, and used the same that he before had uttered, when he spake in and to the Disciples the words of life: so hee takes off Christs prayers also when he prayes in us: he takes but the words as it were out of Christs mouth, or heart rather, and directs our hearts to offer them up to God. Hee also followes us to the Sacrament, and in that Glasse shewes us Christs face smiling on us, and through his face his heart; and thus helping of us to a sight of him, wee goe away rejoycing that we saw our Saviour that day. Part. 1.

Then secondly, all those workes both of miracles and conversion of sinners, in answer to the Apostles prayers, are a demonstration of this. What a handfull had *Peters* first Sermon after Christs ascension, when 3000. souls were converted by it? The Apostles (you know)

Part. 1. went on to preach forgiveneſſe through Chriſt, and in his Name, and to invite men to him; and what ſignes and wonders did accompany them, to confirme that their preaching? and all were the fruits of Chriſts Interceſſion in heaven: So that what hee promiſed, (*Joh.* 14. 12.) as an evidence of his minding them in heaven, was abundantly fulfilled. They *upon their asking did greater workes then he*: ſo *Acts* 4. 29, 30. at the prayers of *Peter*. And *Heb.* 2. 3, 4. the Apoſtle makes an argument of it, *How ſhal we eſcape* (ſayes he) *if we neglect ſo great ſalvation, which at the firſt began to be ſpoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him, God alſo bearing them witneſſe both with ſignes and wonders, and with divers miracles &c.* Yea, let me adde this, that take all the New Teſtament, and all the Promiſes in it, and expreſſions of Chriſts love, it was written all ſince Chriſts being in heaven, by his Spirit, and that by commiſſion from Chriſt, and therefore all that you finde therein you may build on, as his very heart; and therein ſee, that

wh

what he once ſaid on earth, he repealeth not a word now hee is in heaven; his minde continues the ſame: And the conſideration hereof may adde a great confirmation to our faith herein. Part. 1.

Thirdly, ſome of the Apoſtles ſpake with him ſince, even many yeares after his Aſcenſion. Thus *Iohn*, and *Paul*, (of which the laſt was in heaven with him) and they both doe give out the ſame thing of him. *Paul* heard not one Sermon of Chriſts (that we know of) whilſt on earth, and received the Goſpell from no man, Apoſtle, or other, but by the immediate revelation of Jeſus Chriſt from heaven (as he ſpeaks *Gal.* 1.11,12.) But he was converted by Chriſt himſelfe from heaven, by immediate ſpeech and conference of Chriſt with him; and this long after his Aſcenſion. And in that one inſtance Chriſt abundantly ſhewed his heart and purpoſe to continue to all ſorts of ſinners to the end of the world. Thus in two places that great Apoſtle telleth us; the firſt is, 1 *Timothy*, cap. 1. verſe 13. *I was a perſecuter, a*

Part. 1. *blasphemer* (sayes he) *but I obtained mercy, and the grace of our Lord,* (namely, Jesus Christ) *was exceeding abundant:* and upon this he declares with open mouth (as it were from Christs own selfe, who spake to him from heaven, that this is *the faithfullest saying* that ever was uttered, *that Christ came into the world to save sinners, whereof I am chiefe,* (sayes he) *ver.* 15. And to testifie that this was the very scope of Christ in thus converting of *Paul*, himselfe; and *Pauls* scope also in that place to *Timothy* to shew so much, appeares by what followes, *vers.* 16. *For this cause I obtained this mercy, that in mee* [*first*] *Jesus Christ might shew forth all long-suffering for a paterne to all them that should hereafter beleeve on him, unto life everlasting.* It is expresse (you see) to assure all sinners unto the end of the world, of Christs heart towards them: This was his drift: *For this very cause* (sayes *Paul.*) The second place I alledge in proofe of this, is the story of *Pauls* conversion, where he diligently inserts the very words

that

that Christ spake to him from heaven, (Acts 26. 16.) which were these, [*I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a Minister and a Witnesse, —— to send thee to the Gentiles, [to open their eyes, and to turne them from darknesse to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgivenesse of sinnes, and an inheritance among them that are sanctified by faith that is in mee.*] Brethren, these as Christs words since hee went to heaven, and hee tels *Paul* hee appeared unto him, to testifie thus much. This for *Pauls* conference with him. Part. 1.

Then againe, sixty yeares after his Ascension, did the Apostle *Iohn* receive a Revelation from him, even when all the Apostles were dead (for after all their deaths was that booke written) and that Revelation is said to bee in a more immediate manner, *the Revelation of Jesus Christ*, (so *Chap.* 1. 1.) then any other of the Apostles writings: and you read, that Christ made an apparition of himselfe to him, and said, *I am he that was dead, and am alive,*

Part. 1. *and live for evermore, Chap.* 1. 18. Now let us but consider Christs last words, in that his last Booke, (the last that Christ hath spoken since he went to Heaven, or that hee is to utter till the day of Judgement) you have them in the last Chapter, *ver.* 16. *I Jesus have sent mine Angel to testifie unto you these things in the Churches: I am the root and the offspring of David;* — [*and the Spirit and the Bride say, Come: and let him that heareth say, Come: and let him that is athirst come: and whosoever will, let him take of the water of life freely.*] They are the latter words I cite this place for; The occasion of these words was this: Christ was now in Heaven, and had before promised one day to come againe, and fetch us all to Heaven: And in the meane time, marke what an eccho-ing and answering of hearts and of desires there is mutually betweene *Him from Heaven*, and beleeving *sinners* from below: *Earth calls* upon *Heaven*, and Heaven calls upon earth, as the Prophet speakes. The *Bride* from earth sayes unto Christ, *Come to me*; and the *Spirit* in the Saints

Saints hearts below, sayes, *Come* unto him also: and Christ cries out as loud from Heaven, *Come*, in answer unto this desire in them; so that heaven and earth ring againe of it. *Let him that is athirst come to me; and let him that will come, come, and take of the waters of life freely:* This is Christs speech unto men on earth. They call him to come unto earth, to Judgement; and he calls sinners to come up to heaven unto him for mercy: They cannot desire his comming to them, so much as he desires their comming to him. Now what is the meaning of this, that upon their calling upon him to come, hee should thus call upon them to come? It is in effect as if he had plainly uttered himselfe thus, I have a heart to come to you, but I must have all you my Elect that are to bee on earth, come to mee first: You would have me come downe to you, but I must stay here, till all that the Father hath given me, bee come to mee; and then you shall be sure, quickly to have mee with you: Hereby expressing how much his heart Part. 1.

Part. 1. now long after them. This to bee his meaning, is evident by the words which hee addes, *verse* 20. *He which testifies these things* (namely Christ) *sayes*, [*Surely, I come quickly.*] And if wee observe how much by the by (as it were) these words of Christ doe come in, it makes them the more remarkable to shew his heart in uttering them. This Book was intended meerly as a propheſie of the times of the Gospel untill his comming; unto which period of it, when *Iohn* had brought that Prophetique story, hee brings in the Bride, longing for that comming of Christ, [*The Bride sayes, Come.*] And no sooner sayes she so, but Christ by way of retortion, doth likewise say, *Come*, unto her also; yea, it puts the more observation upon it, that he had uttered the same words before, *Revel.* 21. 6. but notwithstanding hee will repeat them again, and have them to bee his last words. All which shews how much his heart was in this part of the Gospel, to invite sinners to him; that now when he is to speake but one sentence more, till wee heare the sound

ſound to judgement, hee ſhould e- Part. 1.
ſpecially make choyce of theſe words. Let them therefore for ever ſtick with you, as being worthy to bee your laſt thoughts when you come to dye, and when you are a going to him. He ſpeaks indeed ſomething elſe after them; but that which he ſayes afterwards, is but to ſet a ſeal unto theſe words, and to the reſt of the Scriptures, whereof this is the chiefe. And further to ſhew that theſe words were ſingled out to be his laſt, and that hee meant to ſpeak no more till the day of judgement, therfore alſo he adds a *curſe* to *him*, who ſhould *adde to them*, or *take from them*. He addes indeed after that another ſpeech, but it is onely to ingeminate his willingneſſe to *come quickly*, were all his elect but once come in to him, ſo *verſ.* 20. And all this tends to aſſure us that is his heart, and we ſhal finde him of no other minde untill his comming againe.

And that you may yet the more conſider them as thus purpoſely brought in by him as his laſt words, to make them

Part. 1. sticke with us, let me adde another observation about them, and that is this, that at another time when hee was upon earth, hee in like manner singled out these very words (I meane the matter of them) as the conclusion and shutting up of many dayes preaching. Thus *John* 7. 37. *In the last day, that great day of the Feast,* Iesus *stood and cried,* [*If any man thirst let him come to mee and drinke.*] These words were spoken on the *last day of the feast,* after which hee was to preach no more at that time, and for a good while after unto them: (and he had preached upon all the former dayes of that feast, as his manner was) and it was [*the great*] *day of the Feast,* when he had the greatest audience: and you see hee chooseth this for his last sentence, of that his last Sermon then; and when he would give them something at parting, as a *Viaticum,* which hee would have them carry home with them to feed upon above all the rest, these are his words, *If any man thirst, let him come to me, and* [*drinke:*] (which himselfe interprets to be *beleeving*

on

on him, *ver.* 38.) and hee *ſtands up* Part. 1.
to ſpeake this; yea, *hee cryes*, ſayes the Text, with open mouth, with utmoſt vehemency, to the intent that all might heare this above all ſayings elſe. And thus in like manner at this time alſo, when he is to ſpeake no more, but to hold his tongue for ever til the day of judgment, (nor is to write any more Scriptures) he then ſends his Angel to teſtifie theſe to be his laſt words; and this, although hee had ſpoken them before: It was therefore aſſuredly done, to ſhew his heart in them. They were his laſt words then, and they ſhall be mine in the cloſure of this Diſcourſe, for what can there be added to them?

THE

THE HEART OF Christ in Heaven, TO Sinners on Earth.

PART. II.

HEB. 4. 15.

For we have not an High-priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities: but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.

THE onely Use I shall make of these words is, to be a foundation unto that second part of that head or point of Doctrine into which I have made an entrance; which was to demonstrate the *gracious inclination and temper of Christs heart towards sinners, now he is in Heaven.*

The

The extrinſecall Demonſtrations of this (which I make the firſt part of it) are diſpatched: & for a groundwork to theſe more *Intrinſecall Demonſtrations* (which make a ſecond part) I have choſen this Text, as that which above any other ſpeaks his heart moſt, and ſets out the frame and workings of it towards ſinners; and that ſo ſenſibly, that it doth (as it were) take our hands, and lay them upon Chriſts breaſt, and let us feele how his heart beats, and his bowels yerne towards us, even now hee is in glory: The very ſcope of theſe words being manifeſtly to encourage beleevers againſt all that may diſcourage them from the conſideration of Chriſts heart towards them now in heaven. Part. 2.

To open them ſo far as they ſerve to my preſent purpoſe.

Firſt, all that may any way diſcourage us, hee here calls by the name of *Infirmities*, thereby meaning both.

1. The *evill of afflictions* of what ſort ſoever, Perſecutions, &c. *from without.*

2. The

2. The *evill of sins* which doe most of all discourage us, *from within.*

And that both these are meant,

1. That under [*Infirmities*] hee meanes persecutions and afflictions is manifest; not onely in that the word is often used in that sense, as 2 *Cor.* 11.30. and *Chap.* 12. 5. but also it is plaine, that the phrase is here so intended, for his scope is to comfort them against what would pull from them their profession, as that fore-going exhortation [*Let us hold fast our profession*] implyes; Now that which attempted to pull it from them, were their persecutions and oppositions from without: It appeares also because his argument here of comforting them against these infirmities, is drawne from Christs example, *In that hee was in all things tempted as we are.*

Yet secondly, by [*infirmities*] are meant sins also, for so in the processe of this discourse he useth the phrase, and makes them the main object of our High Priests pity; for in the next words, *Chap.* 5. 2. shewing what

what the qualifications of the High Priest under the Law were, (who were types of our great High priest) he makes this one, (sutable to this here mentioned) that he was to bee one that *could have compassion on the ignorant, and those that were out of the way*; (that is, upon sinners, for sins are those ignorances and goings astray from God;) and then addes, *in that himselfe was cloathed with infirmities*; that is, with sins. And although it is said here that Christ was without sin in all, yet he was tempted by Satan unto all sorts of sins, even as wee are. And that by [*infirmities*] sins are mainly here intended, is yet more evident from the remedy propounded against them which they are here encouraged to seeke for at the throne of grace, namely, *Grace* and *Mercie*. *Therefore let us come boldly to the throne of Grace, that wee may finde* [*Grace and mercy*] *to helpe in time of need:* So it followes in the next words. *Grace* to helpe against the power of sin, and *Mercy* against the guilt and punishment of it; both which are the greatest discouragers Part. 2.

to

Part. 2. to come boldly to that throne, and therfore he must needs intend those kinds of *infirmities* chiefly in this his encouragement and comfortory given.

Now *secondly*, for a *support* against both these, he lets us understand how feelingly and sensibly affected the heart of Christ is to sinners under all these their *infirmities*, now he is in heaven (for of him advanced into heaven, he here speaks, as appeareth by *v.* 14.) And if the coherence with that verse be observed, we shall see that he brings in this narration of it setly, by way of preventing an objection which might otherwise arise in all mens thoughts from that high and glorious description which he had given of him in that 14. *ver.* [*We have a great High-priest, who is passed into the heavens, &c.*] He knew we would be apt from this presently to thinke, he may be too great to be an High-priest for us to transact our affaires; and that this greatnesse of his might cause him to forget us, or if he did remember us, and take notice of our miseries, yet *being passed into*

the

the Heavens, and so having cast off the frailties of his flesh which he had here, and having cloathed his humane nature with so great a glory, that therefore hee cannot now pity us, as hee did when hee dwelt among us here below; nor be so feelingly affected and touched with our miseries, as to be tenderly moved to compassionate and commiserate us, so he is not now cable of a feeling of griefe, and so, not of a *fellow-feeling*, or *sympathizing* with us; his state and condition now is above all such affections; which affections notwithstanding are they that should put him upon helping us, heartily and cordially. And for him to be exposed to such affections as these, were a weakneſſe, an infirmitie in himselfe, which heaven hath cured him of. His power and glory is so great that hee cannot bee thus touched, even as the *ANGELS* are not: And he is *Advanced farre above all Principalities and powers*, Ephes. 1. 15. Part. 2.

This the Apostle carefully preoccu-

Part. 2. occupates; and it is the very objection which hee takes away. *Wee have not an High-Priest who cannot, &c. 'Duplex negatio æquipollet affirmationi*; nay, two negatives doe not onely make an affirmative, but affirme more strongly: they make an affirmation contradictory to a contrary and opposite thought. Now this speech of his is as much as if he should have said, Well, let heaven have made what alteration soever, upon his condition, in glorifying his humane nature, which be it never so free from fleshly passions, and in stead of flesh be made like Heaven; let him bee never so incapable of impressions from below: yet hee retaines one tender part and bare place in his heart still unarmed, (as it were) even to suffer with you, and to be touched if you bee. The word is a deepe one, [συμπαθῆσαι.] *He suffers with you*, he is as tender in his bowels to you as ever he was: that hee might bee moved to pitie you, he is willing to suffer (as it were) one place to bee left naked, and to be flesh still, on which hee may be wounded with your

your miſeries, that ſo he might bee your *mercifull High-Prieſt.* Part. 2.

And whereas it may be objected that this were a weakneſſe: The Apoſtle affirmes that this is his power, and a perfection and ſtrength (of love ſurely) in him, as the word δυνάμενον importeth: that is, that makes him thus *able* and *powerfull* to take our miſeries into his heart, though glorified, and ſo to bee affected with them, as if hee ſuffered with us, and ſo to relieve us out of that principle, out of which hee would relieve himſelfe.

There are two things which this Text gives me occaſion to take notice of, and apart to handle.

Firſt, (more generally) That Chriſts heart now in heaven, is as graciouſly affected unto ſinners, as ever it was on earth.

And ſecondly, (more particularly) the *manner how.*

Or thus:

1. That he is *touched with a feeling*, or *ſympathizeth with us*, (as the word is.)

2. The way how this comes to paſſe; even through *his having been tempted*

Part. 2. *tempted in all things like unto us.* In handling the first, I shall give those *Intrinsecall* Demonstrations of it that remaine; and in handling the other, further open the Text. To come therefore first to those *Intrinsecall* Demonstrations of this Doctrine, which I engraft upon these words, and shootes naturally from them, namely, that the heart of Jesus Christ now he is in heaven is as graciously inclined to sinners, as ever it was on earth.

SECT. I.

The first sort of Intrinsecall *Demonstrations drawne from the influence all the three Persons have for ever into the heart of the Humane nature of Christ in heaven.*

THe first sort of Demonstrations shall bee fetcht from all the three Persons, and their severall influence they have into Christs heart in heaven, to encline it towards us.

The first shall be taken from God his

his Father, who hath thus advanced him; and it hath two parts: 1. That God hath given a perpetuall command to Christ to love sinners: 2. That therefore his heart continues the same for ever. Part. 2.

For the first, God the Father *hath given Jesus Christ a special command to love sinners*; & hath withall, *implanted* a mercifull *gracious disposition in his heart towards them.* This I mentiō to argue it, because it is that which Christ alledgeth, *John* 6.37. as the originall ground of this disposition of his, *not to cast out those that come to him: For it is my Father will* (saies he in the following verses) *that I should performe that which I came downe from heaven for, ver.*38. And this lyes now still upon him now he is in Heaven, as much as ever: for *his will also is* (sayes hee, *verse* 39. 40.) *that I should raise them up at the last day*, so as it must needs continue the same till then. And compare with this the tenth of *John*, from *verse* fifteenth to the eighteenth, where having discoursed before of his care and love to his sheepe, to *give his life* for them, to *know* and

Part. 2. and owne them, and *to bring them into the fold, &c.* he concludes at *ver.* 18. [*This commandment have I received from my Father.*] It is his *will,* sayes the 6. of *John*, (and if a good son knowes that a thing is his fathers mind and will it is enough to move him to doe it; much more if it be his expresse command.) And in this 10. of *John* he further sayes, that it is the *command* which he had *received from the Father.* A command is a mans will peremptorily expressed; so as there must bee a breach, if it be not fulfilled: and such a command hath God given Christ concerning us. Out of both which places I observe three things to be the matter of this will and command of Gods: First, that Christ should die for his sheep; in respect to which command, he continued so to love them whilst here as to *lay downe his life for them:* *John* 10.15. but, then he tooke it up againe, and is ascended into Heaven. Therefore those other two things commanded him, doe concerne him when hee is in glory namely to *receive all that come to*

him

him, which is the ſecond; and Part. 2.
the third, to looke that he *loſe none of thoſe for whom he dyed*, but to *raiſe them up*. And for theſe his Fathers command lyes as ſtrictly on him, now he is in Heaven, as for dying for them whilſt he was on earth; [*This command have I received from my Father, and this is his will.*]

And together with this command, God did put into his heart (as where he commands hee ever uſeth to doe) ſuch an inſtinct of tranſcendent love towards them, as ſhall ſo ſtrongly encline him to performe it, that he ſhall need no more commands. He hath put ſuch a στοργὴ ſuch an eſpeciall love into him, as he hath put into the hearts of parents towards their own children, more then to all other mens children which they ſee beſides, although more beautifull and more witty then their owne. And both this commandement, and this inclination of love towards them, we have at once expreſſed *Pſal.* 40.8. where giving the reaſon why hee became our Mediator, and ſacrificed himſelfe, hee not only

Part. 2. onely ſayes, *I come to doe thy will O God*; but alſo, *Thy law is in my bowells*: In which ſpeech, both theſe two are mentioned:

1. That command I mentioned is there expreſſed, for it is called *a Law.*

And ſecondly it was a Law wrought into ſuitable *diſpoſitions* in his heart; and therefore ſaid to bee a *Law in his heart or bowells.*

You may eaſily conceive what Law it was by the ſubject of it, his *Bowells*; which are ſtill put for the moſt tender affections; (*Coloſ.*3.12. *Bowells of mercy, kindneſſe, &c.*) It was no other then that Law of love, mercy and pitty to poore ſinners, which God gave him in charge, as he was to bee Mediator. It was that ſpeciall Law which lay on him as hee was the *ſecond Adam*; like that which was given to the firſt *Adam*, *Non concedendi*, over and above the Morall Law, *not to eat the forbidden fruit*; ſuch a Law was this hee there ſpeakes of: It was the Law of his being a Mediator and a ſacri-

fice,

fice, (for of that he expreſly ſpeaks, *v.* 6.7.) over and beſides the Morall Law, which was common to him with us. The word in the originall is, [*In the middeſt*] *of my bowels*, to ſhew it was deeply ingraven: It had it's ſeat in the center, it ſate neereſt, and was moſt inward in his heart. Part. 2.

Yea, and as that ſpeciall Law of not eating the forbidden fruit, was to *Adam*, *Præceptum Symbolicum* (as Divines call it) given over and beſides all the ten Commandements, to bee a *tryall*, a *ſigne*, or *ſymbole* of his obedience to all the reſt; ſuch was this Law given unto Chriſt, the ſecond *Adam*; ſo as that God would judge of all his other obedience unto himſelfe by this: Yea, it was laid on him with that earneſtneſſe by God, and ſo commended by him, as that if ever Chriſt would have him to love him, he ſhould be ſure to love us. Thus in that place forecited, *John* 10. 17, 18. Chriſt comforts himſelfe with this in his obedience, [*Therefore doth my Father love me:*] It is ſpoken in

Part. 2. relation unto his fulfilling this his command formerly mentioned; and ſo withall imports, as if God ſhould love Chriſt the better for the love he ſhould ſhew to us; it pleaſed him ſo well to ſee Chriſt love us. And ſo it is as if God when he gave Chriſt that Commandement, *ver.* 18. had ſaid, *Sonne,* as you would have my love continue towards you let me ſee your love towards me ſhewne in being kind to theſe I have given you, *whom I have loved with the ſame love wherewith I have loved you* ; (as you have it *John* 17. 23.) As God would have us ſhew love unto him, by loving his children: ſo hee would have Chriſt alſo ſhew his love towards him by loving of us.

Now for the ſecond Branch of this Demonſtration, namely, that that love which Chriſt, when on earth, expreſſed to be in his heart, and which made him die for ſinners upon this command of his Father, that it doth certainely continue in his heart ſtill, now that hee is in Heaven, and that as quick and as tender as ever it was

on

on earth, even as when he was on the Crosse, and that because of his Fathers command. It is evidenced thus: For it being a Law written in the midst of his bowels by his Father, it becomes naturall to him, and so indelible, and (as other Morall Laws of God written in the heart are) perpetuall. And as in us, when we shall be in heaven, though *Faith* shall faile, and *Hope* vanish, yet *Love shall continue* (as the Apostle speaks) so doth this love in Christs heart continue also, and suffers no decay; and is shewne as much now in receiving sinners, and interceding for them, and being pitiful unto them, as then in dying for them. And this love to sinners being so commanded & pressed upon him, (as was said) that as he would have his Father love him, he should love them; and so, being urged upon all that great love that is between him and his Father; this as it must needs work and boile up a strong love in him unto sinners, so likewise the most constant and never-decaying love that could be: And this is argued from the analogy Part. 2.

Part. 2. of that principle upon which Christ urgeth us to love himselfe, *Joh.* 15. 10. He moveth his Disciples to *keep the Commandments* he gave them, and useth this argument, [*For so shall you abide in my love*;] and backs it with his owne instance, [*even as I have kept my Fathers commandments, and abide in his love.*] Now therefore this being the great Commandment that God layeth on him, to love, and die for, and to continue to love, and receive sinners that come to him, and raise them up at the latter day, certainely hee continues to keep it most exactly, as being one of the great tyes between him and his Father, so to continue in his love to him. Therfore so long as he continues in his Fathers love, (and now hee is in Heaven, and at his right hand, he must needs continue in highest favour with him;) so long we may be sure hee continues to observe this. And thus that he should continue still to love us, both love to his Father, and love to himselfe obligeth him: we may therefore bee sure of him, that hee both doth it, and will

doe

doe it for ever. O what a comfort is it, that as children are mutuall pledges and tyes of love between man and wife, so that we should be made such between God the Father and the Sonne! And this demonstration is taken from the influence of the first person of the Trinity; namely, from God the Father. Part. 2.

Then (secondly) this his love is not a forced love, which he strives onely to beare towards us, because his Father commanded him to marry us; but it is his nature, his disposition: Which added to the former, affords a second demonstration of the point in hand, and is drawne from God the Sonne. This disposition is free and naturall to him; hee should not be Gods Sonne else, nor take after his heavenly Father: unto whom it is naturall to shew mercy, but not so to punish, which is his strange worke, but *mercy pleaseth him*, he *is the Father of mercy*, he begets them naturally. Now Christ is his own Son, ἴδιος υἱὸς (as by way of distinction he is called) and his naturall Son;

Part. 2. yea, his humane nature being united to the second Person, is thereby become the naturall Son of God, not adopted as we are. And if he be his naturall Son in priviledges, then also his Fathers properties are naturall to him; more naturall then to us, who are but his adopted sons. And if we *as the elect of God* (who are but the adopted sons are) exhorted to put on *Bowels of mercy, kindnesse, humblenesse of minde, meeknesse, &c.* (as *Col.* 3 12.) then much more must these dispositions needs be found in Christ the Naturall Son, and these, not *put on by him*, but be as naturall to him as his Son-ship is: *God is love*, (as *John* sayes) and Christ is love covered over with flesh, yea, our flesh. And besides it is certaine, that as God hath fashioned the hearts of all men, and some of the sons of men unto more mercy and pity (naturally) then others, and then the holy Spirit comming on them to sanctifie their naturall dispositions, useth to worke according to their tempers; even so it is certaine, that he tempered the heart of Christ, & made it of a softer mold

mold and temper then the tender- Part. 2.
neſſe of all mens hearts put toge-
ther into one (to ſoften it) would
have been of. When he was to aſ-
ſume an humane nature, hee is
brought in, ſaying, (*Heb.* 10.) *A body
haſt thou fitted me* : That is, an hu-
mane nature, fitted as in other
things, ſo in the temper of it, for the
God-head to work & ſhew his per-
fections in beſt. And as he tooke an
humane nature on purpoſe to bee a
mercifull High-prieſt, as *Heb.* 2.14.
ſo ſuch an humane nature, and of ſo
ſpeciall a temper & frame as might
be more mercifull then all Men or
Angels. His humane nature was
made without hands; that is, was not
of the ordinary make that other mens
hearts are of: though for the matter
the ſame, yet not for the frame of his
ſpirit. It was an heart beſpoke for
on purpoſe to be made a *veſſel*, or ra-
ther *fountain* of *mercy*, wide and ca-
pable enough to be ſo extended, as
to take in and give forth to us a-
gain, all Gods *Manifeſtative mercies*,
that is, all the mercies God intended
to manifeſt to his elect : and there-
fore Chriſts heart had naturally in

Part. 2. the temper of it, more pity then all men or Angels have, as through which the mercies of the great God were to be dispensed *unto us*; and this heart of his to be the instrument of them. And then, this man and the heart of this man so framed, being united to God, and being made the naturall Son of God, how naturall must mercy needs be unto him?

And therefore continue in him now he is in heaven: For though he laid down all infirmities of our nature, when he rose again; yet no graces that were in him whilst hee was below: they are in him now as much as ever, and being his nature (for nature we know is constant) therefore still remains. You may observe, that when he was upon earth, minding to perswade sinners to have good thoughts of him, as he used that argument of his Fathers command given him; so he also layes open his owne disposition: *Matth.* 11. 28. *Come to me you that are weary and heavy laden,* ——— *for I am meeke and and lowly of heart.* Men are apt to have contrary conceits of Christ, but hee

he tells them his diſpoſition there, by preventing ſuch hard thoughts of him, to allure them unto him the more. Wee are apt to thinke that he being ſo holy, is therefore of a ſevere and ſowre diſpoſition againſt Sinners, and not able to beare them; no, ſayes he, *I am meeke*, gentleneſſe is my nature and temper; as it was of *Moſes*, who was (as in other things, ſo) in that grace his Type: hee was not revenged on *Miriam* and *Aaron*, but interceded for them. So ſayes Chriſt; injuries and unkindneſſes doe not ſo worke upon me, as to make me irreconcilable, it is my nature to forgive, *I am meeke.* Yea, but (may we think) he being the Sonne of God, and Heire of Heaven, and eſpecially being now filled with glory, and ſitting at Gods right hand, he may now deſpiſe the lowlineſſe of us here below; though not out of anger, yet out of that heighth of his greatneſſe and diſtance that he is advanced unto, in that we are too meane for him to marry, or be familiar with: Hee ſurely Part. 2.

Part. 2. hath higher thoughts then to regard ſuch poore low things as wee are: And ſo, though indeed wee conceive him meek, and not prejudiced with injuries, yet he may be too high and lofty to condeſcend ſo far as to regard, or take to heart the condition of poore creatures. No, ſayes Chriſt, *I am lowly* alſo, willing to beſtow my love and favour upon the pooreſt and meaneſt. And further, all this is not a ſemblance of ſuch an affable diſpoſition, nor is it externally put on in the face and outward carriage onely (as in many great ones, that will ſeem gentle and courteous) but there is all this ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ, *in the heart*: it is his temper, his diſpoſition, his nature to be gracious: which nature he can never lay aſide. And that his greatneſſe when he comes to enjoy it in Heaven, would not a whit alter his diſpoſition in him, appeares by this, that he at the very ſame time when hee uttered theſe words, tooke into conſideration all his glory to come, and utters both *that* and his meeknes with the ſame breath: So verſe 27. *All things are delive-*

red

red to me by my Father: and presently after for all this he sayes, *Come unto me all you that are heavy laden,* — [*I am meeke*;] *ver.* 28. 29. Looke therefore what lovely, sweet, and delightful thoughts you use to have of a deare friend, who is of an amiable nature, or of some eminently holy or meeke Saint, of whom you think with your selves, I could put my soul into such a mans hands, and can comprise my salvation to him (as I have heard it spoken of some:) Or looke how wee should have been encouraged to have dealt with *Moses* in matter of forgivenesse (who was the meekest man on earth) or treated with *Ioseph*, by what wee read of his bowels towards his brethren: or what thoughts wee have of the tender hearts of *Paul*, or *Timothy*, unto the souls of men, in begetting and in nurturing and bringing them up to life (*being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing* (sayes *Paul*) *to impart our own souls to you*, 1 *Thess.* 2. 8.) and this, *naturally*, (as his word is, 2 *Philip.* 20.) even such and infinitely more raised apprehen- Part. 2.

Part. 2. prehensions should we have of that sweetnesse and candour that is in Jesus Christ, as being much more naturall to him.

And therefore the same Apostle doth make Christs bowells the patterne of his, *Phil.* 8.1. *God is my witnesse, how greatly I long after you in the bowells of Jesus Christ.* This phrase [*in the bowels of Christ*] hath (according to Interpreters) two meanings, and both serve to illustrate that which I intend: First, [*in the bowels of Christ*] is taken *causally*, as if hee meant to shew that those bowels or compassions were infused into him from Christ, and so longed after them with such kind of bowels, as Christ had wrought in him: and if so, that Christ put such bowels into him, hath he not them in himself much more? *Paul* had reason to say, [*In the bowels of Christ*] for, in this sense I am sure he, once, had scarce the heart and bowels of a man in him, namely, when he was out of Christ, how furious and Lion-like a spirit had he against the Saints, and what havock made hee of them, being ready even

even to pull out their bowells? And how came *Paul* by such tender bowells now towards them? Who gave him now such tender affections? Even Jesus Christ, it was he that of a Lion made him a Lambe. If therefore in *Paul* these bowells were not naturall, (but the contrary rather were naturall to him) and yet they so abounded in him, and that *naturally*, as himself speaks; how much more must they needs abound in Christ, to whom they are native and in-bred? Or else secondly, [*In the bowells*, is put for [*Instar*] *Like the bowells*, or *After the bowells*, according to the analogie of the Hebrew phrase: and so then the meaning were this, Like as the bowels of Jesus Christ doe yerne after you, so doe mine. [*Bowells*] are a Metaphor to signifie tender and motherly affections and mercies: so *Luke* 1.78. [*Through the tender mercies;*] In the originall it is [*The bowels of mercie.*] Thus *Paul* when hee would signifie how tender his affections were, he instances in the Bowels of Jesus Christ, (he making Christ his patterne in this in all, Part. 2.

Part. 2. all, [*Be yee followers of me, as I am of Christ.*] Now how desirous was this great Apostle to beget men to Christ? He cared not what else hee lost, so he might *win some*: hee *counted not his life deare*, nay; not his salvation deare, *but wisht himselfe accursed for his brethren*, (who yet were the greatest enemies Christ then had on earth:) How glad was he when any soule came in? How sorry when any fell off? *falling into a new travail* (hee knew not how better to expresse the anxiety of his spirit) for the *Galatians*, till *Christ was formed in them.* How comforted was he when hee heard tidings of the constancie and encrease of any of their faith, 1. *Thes.* 3. 6. 7. and *vers.* 8. hee sayes, *for now we live, if you stand fast in the Lord.* Read all his Epistles, and take the character of his spirit this way; & when you have done, look up to Christs humane nature in heaven, & think with your selves, *Such a man is Christ. Paul* warbles out in all these high strains of affections, but the *sounding of Christs bowels* in heaven in a lower key: They are naturall

Esay 63.

naturall to Christ, they all and infinite more are eminent in him. And this is the second *Demonstration* taken from his own naturall disposition, as Sonne of God. Part. 2.

A third *Demonstration* shall bee taken from the Third Person of the Trinity, the holy Ghost. If the same spirit that was upon him, and in him, when hee was on earth, doth but still rest upon him now hee is in heaven, then these dispositions must needs still entirely remain in him.

This *Demonstration* is made up of two propositions put together: 1. That the holy Ghost dwelling in him, concurres to make his heart thus graciously affected to sinners: And 2. That the same spirit dwells and continues in and upon him for ever in heaven.

For the first, It was the Spirit who over-shadowed his mother, and in the mean while knit that indissoluble knot betweene our Nature and the second Person, and that also knit his heart unto us; It was the Spirit who sanctified him in the womb; It was the Spirit that rested on him above measure, and

fitted

Part. 2. fitted him with a meeke ſpirit for the workes of his mediation; and indeed for the very grace ſake of meekneſſe did the Spirit come more eſpecially upon him. Therefore when he was firſt ſolemnly inaugurated into that office, at his baptiſme, (for then he viſibly and profeſſedly entred upon the execution of it) the *holy Ghoſt deſcended* upon him: and how? *As a Dove*; ſo alſo the Evangeliſts joyntly report it. But why in the ſhape of a Dove? All aparitions that God at any time made of himſelfe, were not ſo much to ſhew what God is in himſelfe, as how he is affected towards us, and declare what effects hee workes in us: ſo here, this ſhape of a Dove reſting upon him, was to ſhew thoſe ſpeciall gracious diſpoſitions wherewith the holy Ghoſt fitted Jeſus Chriſt to be a Mediator. A *Dove* (you know) is the moſt *innocent* and moſt meeke creature, *without gall, without tallons*, having no fiercenesſe in it, expreſſing nothing but love and friendſhip to its mate in all its carriages, and mourning over it in its diſtreſſes: and was there-

therefore a fit emblem to expresse what a frame and temper of spirit the holy Ghost did upon this his descending on him, fill the heart of Christ with, and this without measure: that as sweetly as Doves do converse with Doves, sympathising and mourning each over other, so may we with Christ, for hee thus sympathizeth with us. And though he had the Spirit before, yet now he was anointed with him (in respect of such effects as these, which appertained to the execution of his office) with a larger measure, and more eminently then before. Therefore the Evangelist *Luke* notes upon it, (*Chap.* 4. 1.) *Jesus being full of the holy Ghost, returned fom Jordan.* And *Peter* also puts the like glosse upon it, as appeares *Acts* 10. 37. for speaking there of the baptisme of *John*, he shewes how *after that his being baptised, he began to preach*; and *how God having anointed him with the holy Ghost*, (namely, at that baptisme of his) *he went about doing good, &c.* And that this was the principall thing signified by this descending of the holy Ghost as a Dove upon Part. 2.

Part. 2. upon him, (even chiefly to note out his meekeneſſe, and ſympathizing heart with ſinners, wrought in him by the holy Ghoſt) is evident by two places, where Chriſt himſelfe puts that very intendment on it.

The firſt preſently after, in the firſt Sermon that he preached after that his having received the holy Ghoſt, (in the ſame 4. of *Luke*) where firſt it is noted *ver.* 1 that hee returned from being baptized, *full of the Spirit*, and ſo was led to be tempted: then *v.* 14. it is ſaid that hee returned from being tempted *in the power of that Spirit*, and after this is explained by himſelf the myſtery of his having received the Spirit in the likeneſſe of a dove, and this is the ſubject matter of the firſt Text which he opened in his firſt Sermon, ſingled out by him on purpoſe, by choice, not chance, out of *Iſaiah*, which he read to them, (*ver.* 18) [*The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, becauſe he hath anointed me to preach the Goſpel to the poore*, (that is, in ſpirit, the afflicted in conſcience for ſin) *he hath ſent me to heale the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to*

the

the captives, and recovering ſight to the blind, to ſet at liberty them that are bruiſed, &c.] And when hee had read ſo much as concerned the expreſſing the compaſſionate diſpoſition of his ſpirit unto ſinners, (whoſe miſery he ſets downe by all ſorts of outward evills) then hee reads no further, but cloſeth the Booke, as intimating, that theſe were the main effects of that his receiving the Spirit. [*The Spirit of the Lord is upon me,* [*becauſe*] *he hath anointed me to preach the Goſpel to the poore:*] That is, for this end, or for this very purpoſe hath he given me his Spirit, *becauſe* I was deſigned, or anointed to this worke, and by that Spirit alſo hath he anointed, or qualified me with theſe gifts and diſpoſitions ſuitable to that worke. Part. 2.

Another place that makes the fruit and end of his receiving the Spirit then at his baptiſme, to be theſe tender diſpoſitions unto ſinners, is that in *Matth.* 12.18,19, &c. out of another place of *Iſaiah*, [*Behold my Beloved, in whom my ſoul is well pleaſed, I will put my Spirit upon him, and he ſhal ſhew judge-*

Part. 2. *judgement to the Gentiles, &c.*] That seems to be a terrible word, but be not afraid of it; for by [*judgement*] is meant even the doctrine of free grace and of the Gospel, that changeth, and reformes men: As in like manner (according to the Hebrew phrase) in *ver.* 20. by *judgement* is meant the worke of Gods grace on mens hearts: when he saies [*He will send forth judgement unto victory,*] the worke of grace being the counterpane of the Doctrine of grace. And in preaching this Doctrine (which in it selfe is good tidings) the Prophet shewes how he should carry it with a spirit, answerable and suitable thereunto, even full of all meeknesse, stilnesse, calmnesse, and modesty, which he expresseth by proverbiall speeches usuall in all those times, to expresse so much by, [*He shal not strive nor cry, neither shal any man hear his voice in the streets:*] that is, he shall deale with all stilnesse and meekenesse; without violence, or boisterousnesse. *John* had the *voice of a cryer*, he was a man of a severe spirit; but Christ came *piping and dauncing*; a melodious sweetnesse

was

was in his miniſtery and ſpirit; and Part. 2.
in the courſe of his miniſtery hee went ſo tenderly to worke, he was ſo heedfull to broken ſoules, and had ſuch regard to their diſcouragements, that it is ſaid *hee would not breake the bruiſed reed*: That is, hee would ſet his ſteps with ſuch heed, as not to tread on a reed that was broken in the leaf; or he would walke ſo lightly and ſoftly, that if it lay in his way, though he went over it, yet he would not have further *bruiſed*; nor quenched either by treading out the *ſmeaking flax*, (which is eaſily done) or with any ruſhing motion, have raiſed ſo much winde as to blow out a weike of a candle, (as ſome tranſlate it) ſmoaking in the ſocket, which the leaſt ſtirring of the aire puffes out. All this is to expreſſe the tenderneſſe of his heart; and this, upon his receiving the Spirit, and eſpecially from the time of his baptizing: for then (you know) thoſe words were together therewith uttered, [*This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleaſed*] and they are the ſame words alſo, which together Gods giving him

Part. 2. him the Spirit are joyned in that 40. of *Esa.* whence these words are taken. So that he was filled with the Spirit, to that end to raise up in him such sweet affections towards sinners.

Now for the second part that goes to make up this Demonstration: It is as certaine, that the same Spirit that was upon Christ, and acted his spirit here below, doth still abide upon him in heaven. It must never be said, The Spirit of the Lord is departed from *Him*, who is the Sender and Bestower of the holy Ghost upon us. And if the Spirit once comming upon his Members *abides with them for ever*, (as Christ promiseth, *John* 14.16.) then much more doth this Spirit abide upon Christ the Head, from whom we all (since Christ was in Heaven) receive that Spirit, and by vertue of which Spirits dwelling in him, he continues to dwell in us. Therefore of him it is said, (*Esay* 11.2.) *The Spirit of the Lord shall* [*rest*] *upon him.* Yea, and in that story of the holy Ghost descending upon him at his Baptisme, it is not only recorded,

ded, that *He descended on him*, but over & above it is added, [*And abode upon him.*] Yea further, to put the greater emphasis upon it, it is twice repeated: So *John* 1.32. *I saw the Spirit* (sayes the Evangelist) *descending from heaven like a Dove*, (and he adds this also as a further thing observed by him) [*and it abode upon him.*] And then againe, *ver.* 33. *I knew him not*, saies he, *but he that sent me*, gave me this token to know him by, *Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending*, [*and remaining on him,*] *the same is he.* And further, (as it is intimated there) he *rested on him*, to that end, that he might baptize us with the holy Ghost unto the end of the world: [*the same*, saies he, *is he that baptizeth with the holy Ghost,*] He at first *descends* as a Dove, and then *abides* as a Dove for ever upon him; and this Dove it selfe came from Heaven first: And therefore certainly now that Christ himselfe is gone to Heaven, he abides and sits upon him much more as a Dove still there. Moreover let me adde this, that although the Spirit rested on him here without measure in Part. 2.

Part. 2. in comparison of us; yet it may be safely said, that the Spirit in respect of his effects in gifts of grace and glory, rests more abundantly on him in heaven, then he did on earth, even in the same sense that at his baptisme (as was said) he rested on him in such respects more abundantly then he did before his Baptisme, during the time of his private life; For as when he came to heaven he was installed King and Priest as it were anew, in respect of a new execution: so for the worke to be done in Heaven, hee was anew anointed with this *oyle of gladnesse above his fellowes*, (as *Psal.* 45. 7.) Which place is meant of him especially as he is in heaven, at Gods *right hand, in fulnesse of joy*, (as *Ps.* 16. *ult.* it is also spoken of him:) when also it is, that *hee goes forth* in his *Majesty to conquer*, (as *ver.* 4. of that 45. *Psal.*) And yet then, *Meekenesse* is not far off, but is made one of his dispositions in this height of glory: So it followes in the forecited verse, *In thy Majesty ride prosperously, because of Truth and Meekenesse, &c.* Therefore *Peter* sayes,

(*Acts*

(*Acts* 2. 36.) that *That same Jesus whom you* [Jewes] *have crucified*, (and who was risen and ascended) *God hath made both Lord and Christ*: [*Lord*] that is, hath exalted him as King in heaven: and [*Christ*] that is, hath also *anointed him*: (and this Oyle is no other then the holy Ghost) with whom (the same *Peter* tels us) he was anointed at his Baptisme, *Acts* 10. 38. Yea, and because he then at once received the Spirit in the fullest measure that for ever he was to receive him; therefore it was that he shed him down on his Apostles, and *baptized them with him*, (as in that second of the *Acts* we read.) Now it is a certain rule, that *whatsoever* wee receive from Christ, *that* he himselfe first receives in himselfe for us. And so one reason why this oyle ran then so plentifully downe on the skirts of this our high Priest, that is, on his members the Apostles and Saints, (and so continues to doe unto this day) is, because our high Priest and Head himselfe, was then afresh anointed with it. Therefore *ver.* 33. of that second of the *Acts*, *Peter* giving an

Part. 2.

Part. 2. account how it came to passe that they were so filled with the holy Ghost, saies, that Christ *having received from the Father the promise of the holy Ghost, had shed him forth on them*; which *receiving* is not to bee only understood of his bare and single receiving the promise of the holy Ghost for us, by having power then given him to shed him downe upon them, as God had promised, (though this is a true meaning of it) but further that hee had received him first as powred forth on himself, and so shed him forth on them: according to that rule, that whatever God doth unto us by Christ, he first doth it unto Christ: all promises are made and fulfilled unto him first, and so unto us in him; al that he bestows on us, he receives in himselfe. And this may be one reason why (as *John* 7.39.) *the Spirit was not as yet given, because Jesus was not as yet glorified*: But now he is in Heaven, he is said *to have the seven Spirits*: so *Rev.* 1.3. (which booke sets him out as he is since he went to Heaven.) Now *those seven Spirits* are the holy Ghost, for it must needs be

be meant, and not of any creature, Part. 2.
as appeares by the 4. *ver.* of that *Chap.* where *grace & peace* are wisht *from the seven spirits*: so called, in respect of the various effects of him both in Christ and us, though but one in person. And seven is a number of perfection, and is therefore there mentioned, to shew, that now Christ hath the Spirit in the utmost measure that the humane nature is capable of. And as his knowledge (which is a fruit of the Spirit) since his Ascention is enlarged, (for before he knew not when the day of Judgement should bee, but now when he wrote this booke of the Revelation, he did) so are his bowells (I speake of the humane nature) extended: all the mercies that God means to bestow being now actually to run through his hands, and his particular notice, and he to bestow them not on Jews only, but on Gentiles also, who were to be converted after he went to Heaven. And so hath now an heart adequate to Gods own heart in the utmost extent of shewing mercy unto any whom God hath intended it unto.

Part. 2. And this is the third *Demonstration* from the Spirits dwelling in him; wherein you may helpe your faith by an experiment of the holy Ghost his dwelling in your owne hearts, and there not only working in you meekneſſe towards others, but pitty towards your ſelves, to get your ſoules ſaved; and to that end, ſtirring up in you inceſſant and *unutterable groanes* before the Throne of grace for grace and mercy. Now the ſame Spirit dwelling in Chriſts heart in heaven, that doth in yours here, and alwayes working in his heart firſt for you, and then in yours by commiſſion from him; reſt aſſured therefore, that that Spirit ſtirres up in him bowels of mercy infinitely larger towards you, then you can have unto your ſelves.

Sect. 2.

A second sort of Demonstrations from severall engagements now lying upon Christ in heaven.

THere are a second sort of Demonstrations which may bee drawne from many other severall engagements continuing and lying upon Christ now he is in heaven: which must needs incline his heart towards us as much, yea more then ever. As

1. The continuance of all those neere and intimate relations and alliances unto us of all sorts; which no glory of his can make any alteration in: and therefore not in his heart and love, nor a declining any respects and offices of love, which such relations doe call for at his hands. All relations that are naturall, such as betweene father and childe, husband and wife, brother and brother, &c. looke what world they are made for, in that world they for ever hold, and can never be

Part. 2. dissolved. These fleshly relations indeed do cease in that other world, because they were made onely for this world: as *Rom.* 7. 10. *The wife is bound to the husband but so long as he lives*: But these relations of Christ unto us, were made in order *to the world to come* (as the Epistle to the Hebrewes calls it:) and therefore are in their full vigour and strength, and receive their compleatment therein. Wherefore it is, that Christ is said to be *the same to day, yesterday, and for ever*, *Heb.* 13. 8. To illustrate this by the constant & indissoluble tie of those relations of this world, wherto no difference of condition, whether of advancement or debasement, can give any discharge. We see in *Ioseph*, when advanced, how as his relations continued, so his affections remained the same to his poor trethren, (who yet had injured him) and also to his father. So *Gen.* 45. where in the same speech hee mentioneth both his own greatest dignities, & advancement, [*God hath made me a father to Pharaoh, and Lord of all his house, & a ruler throughout al the land of Egypt*]

(to

(so *v.*8.) & yet withal he forgetteth not his relations, [*I am Joseph your brother,*] (*ver.*4.) even the same man still. And his affections appeared also to be the same; for he *wept over them, and could not refraine himselfe,* as you have it, *vers.* 1, 2. And the like he expresseth to his father, *ver.* 9. *Goe to my father, and say, Thus saith thy sonne Joseph, God hath made me Lord over all Egypt,* (and yet thy son *Joseph* still.) Part. 2.

Take another instance (wherein there was but the relation of being of the same countrey and allyance) in *Esther*, when advanced to bee Queen of an hundred twenty and seven Provinces; who when shee was in the arms of the greatest Monarch on earth, and enjoyed highest favour with him, yet then she cryes out, *How can I endure to see the evill that shall come upon my people, or how can I endure to see the destruction of my kindred?* So *Ch.* 8. 6. She considered but her relation, and how doth it work in her veins by a sympathy of blood? Now much more doth this hold good of husband and wife, for they are in a neerer relation yet.

Part. 2. Let the wife have been one that was poore and mean, fallen into ſickneſſe, &c. and let the husband be as great and glorious as *Salomon* in all his royalty; all mankind would cry ſhame on ſuch a man, if he ſhould not now own his wife, & be a husband in all love and reſpect to her ſtill. But beyond all theſe relations, the relation of Head and Members, as it is moſt naturall, ſo it obligeth moſt: *No man ever yet hated his owne fleſh* (ſayes the Apoſtle) (though diſeaſed and leprous) *but loveth and cheriſheth it.* And it is the Law of Nature, that *if one member be honoured, all the members* are to *rejoyce with it,* (1. *Cor.* 12. 26.) *and if one member ſuffer, all the reſt* are to *ſuffer with it. Even ſo is Chriſt,* (*as ver.* 12.) And theſe relations are they that do move Chriſt to cotinue his love unto us. *Jeſus knowing that he was to depart out of this world, having loved his owne who were in the world, hee loved them unto the end,* *Joh.* 13. 1. And the reaſon thereof is put upon his relation to them; they were *his owne,* and his own by vertue of all relations whatſoever

ever, his owne Brethren, his owne Spouſe, his owne fleſh; and *the very world will love its owne* (as himſelfe ſpeaks) much more will hee himſelfe love his owne. *He that provides not for his owne family, is worſe then an Infidel*, (ſayes the Apoſtle.) Now though Chriſt bee in heaven, yet his people are his family ſtill: they are retainers to him, though they be on earth; and this, as truly as thoſe that ſtand about his perſon, now he is in his glory. So that ſpeech evidently declares, [*Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named*] they all together make up but one and the ſame family to him as their Lord. Chriſt is both the *founder*, the *ſubject*, and the moſt perfect *exemplar* and *paterne* to us, of all the relations that are found on earth. Firſt, he is the founder of all relations, and affections that accompany them both in nature and grace. As therefore the Pſalmiſt argues, *ſhall he not ſee who made the eye?* So doe I; Shall not he who put all theſe affections into parents, and brothers, ſuitable to their relations, ſhall not he have Part. 2.

Part. 2. them much more in himself? *Though* our Father *Abraham* being in Heaven *be ignorant of us, and Israel acknowledge us not, yet O Lord, thou art our Father, and our Redeemer, &c. Isa.* 36. 16. the Prophet speakes it of Christ; as appeares by *v.*1.& 2.and in a propheſie of the Jews Call;and he ſpeaks it of Christ,as ſuppoſed in Heaven,for he adds,*Look down from heaven and behold from thy habitation of thy holineſſe and thy glory.* There are but two things that ſhould make him to neglect ſinners; his *holineſſe*, as they are ſinners,& his *glory*,as they are mean and low creatures: Now he there mentions both, to ſhew, that notwithſtanding either as they are ſinners he rejects them not,and as they are baſe and mean he deſpiſeth them not.

2. He is the *Subject* of *all* relations, which no creature is. If a man be a husband, yet not a father, or a brother; but Christ is all: No one relation being ſufficient to expreſſe his love, wherewith he loveth and owneth us. And therefore he calls his Church both *Siſter* and *Spouſe*, *Cant.* 5.1.

3. He

3. He is the *paterne*, and exemplar of all these our relations, and they all are but the copies of his. Thus in *Ephes.* 5. Christ is made the paterne of the relation and love of husbands; *Husbands* (sayes the Apostle) *love your wives, as Christ loved his Church*, so *v.* 25. Yea, *v.* 31, 32, 33. the marriage of *Adam*, and the very words he then spake, of cleaving to a wife, are made but the types and shadows of Christs marriage to his Church. Herein I speak (sayes he) *concerning Christ and the Church*: and *this is a great mystery*. First, a *mystery*, that is, this marriage of *Adam* was ordained *hiddenly*, to represent and signifie Christs marriage with his Church. And secondly, it is a *great* mystery, because the thing therby signified is in it self so great, that this is but a shadow of it. And therefore all those relations, & the affections of them, and the effects of those affections, wch you see and read to have been in men, are all, and were ordained to bee (as all things else in this world are) but shadows of what is in Christ; who alone is the truth and substance of Part. 2.

Part. 2. of all similitudes in nature, as wel as of the Ceremoniall types.

If therfore no advancement doth or ought to alter such relations in men, then not in Christ. *He is not ashamed to call us brethren,* as *Heb.* 2. 11. And yet the Apostle had just before said of him. *ver.9. We see Jesus crowned with glory and honour.* Yea,& as when one member suffers, the rest are touched with a simpathy, so is it with Christ. *Paul* persecuted the Saints, the members, and *why persecutest thou me* cries the Head in Heaven: the foot was trodden on, but the head felt it, though *crowned with glory and honour. We are flesh of his flesh, and bone of his bone, Ephes.*5.30. and therefore as *Esther* said, so said Christ, *How can I endure to see the evill that befalls my people?* If a husband hath a wife that is mean, and he become a King, it were his glory and not his shame to advance her; yea, it were his shame to neglect her: especially if when the betrothment was first made, she was then rich and glorious, and a Kings daughter, but since that, falne into poverty, and misery. Now Christs

Spouse,

Spouſe, though now ſhe be faln into ſin and miſery, yet when ſhe was firſt given to Chriſt by God the Father, (who from all eternity made the match) ſhee was lookt upon as all glorious. For in election, at firſt, both Chriſt and we were by God conſidered in that glory which he meanes to bring him and us unto at laſt; that being firſt in Gods *intention*, which is laſt in *execution*. For God at the beginning doth looke at the end of his works, and at what he meanes to make them. And ſo, he then primitively intending to make us thus glorious as we ſhall be, he brought and preſented us to his Sonne in that glaſſe of his Decrees, under that face of glory wherewith at laſt hee meant to endow us. He ſhewed us to him as apparelled with all thoſe jewels of grace and glory which wee ſhall weare in Heaven; he did this then, even as he brought *Eve* unto *Adam*, whoſe marriage was in all the type of this: ſo that as this was the firſt Idea that God took us up in, and that we appeared in before him, ſo alſo wherein hee preſented us then to Chriſt, Part. 2.

Part. 2. Christ, and (as it were) said, such a wife will I give thee. And as such did the second Person marry us; and undertook to bring us to that estate. And that God ordained us thus to fall into sin & misery, was but to illustrate the story of Christs love, & therby to render this our Lover and Husband the more glorious in his love to us, and to make this primitive condition whereunto God meant again to bring us, the more eminently illustrious. And therfore we being married unto him, when we were thus glorious in Gods first intention, although in his decrees about the execution of this, or the bringing us to this glory, we fall into meanness & misery before we attain to it, yet the marriage still holds; Christ took us to run the same fortune with us, & that we should do the like with him. And hence it was, that we being faln into sin, and so our *flesh* become *frail* and *subject to infirmities*, hat he therfore *took part of the same*, as *Heb.* 2.13. And answerably on the other side, he being now advanced to the glory ordained for him, he can never rest till he hath restored us to that beauty

beauty wherin at firſt we were pre- Part. 2.
ſented to him, & till he hath purged and *cleanſed us, that ſo he may preſent us to himſelfe a glorious Church,* (as you have it, *Eph.* 5.26,27.) even ſuch as in Gods firſt intention we were ſhewn to him to become; having that native and originall beauty, & poſſeſſing that eſtate wherein hee looked upon us, when he firſt took liking to us, and married us. This is argued there from this very relation of his being our husband, *v.* 25.26. And therefore though Chriſt bee now in glory, yet let not that diſcourage you, for he hath the heart of a husband towards you, being *betrothed unto you for ever, in faithfulneſſe, and in loving kindneſſe,* (as *Hoſ.* 2.) and the Idea of that beauty is ſo imprinted on his heart, which from everlaſting was ordained you, that he will never ceaſe to ſanctifie and to cleanſe you, till he hath reſtored you to that beauty which once hee took ſuch a liking of.

A ſecond engagement. This love of his unto us is yet further encreaſed, by what he both did, and ſuffered for us here on earth, before hee went to heavē. *Having loved his own,*

Part. 2. so far as to dye for them, *he will* certainly *love them unto the end*, even to eternity. Wee shall finde in all sorts of relations, both spirituall and naturall, that the having done much for any beloved of us, doth beget a further care and love towards them. And the like effect those eminent sufferings of Christ for us, have certainly produced in him; we may see this in parents, for besides that natural affection planted in mothers towards their children, (as they are theirs) the very pains, hard labour, and travaile they were at in bringing them forth, encreaseth their affections towards them, and that in a greater degree then fathers beare, And therefore the eminency of affection is attributed unto that of the *mother* towards her childe, and put upon this that is *the son of her wombe*, *Isai.* 49. 15. And then the performing of that office & work of nusing them themselves, (which yet is done with much trouble and disquietment) doth (in experience) yet more endeare those their children unto them which they so nurse, to an apparent

rent difference of bowels and love, Part. 2.
in compariſon of that which they put forth to others of their owne children which they nurſed not. And therefore in the ſame place of *Eſay*, as the mothers affection to *the ſon of her wombe*, ſo to her *ſucking child*, is mentioned, as being the higheſt inſtance of ſuch love. And as thus in paternall affection, ſo alſo in conjugall. In ſuch mutuall loves in the purſuing of which, there have any difficulties or hardſhips beene encountred; and the more thoſe lovers have ſuffered the one for the other, the more is the edge of their deſires whetted, and their love encreaſed; and the party for whom they ſuffered, is thereby rendred the more deare unto them.

And as it is thus in theſe naturall relations, ſo alſo in ſpirituall; wee may ſee it in holy men, as in *Moſes*, who was a Mediator for the Jews, as Chriſt is for us; *Moſes* therein being but Chriſts Type and ſhadow, and therefore I the rather inſtance in him. He under God had been the deliverer of the people of Iſrael

Part. 2. Israel out of Egypt, with the hazard of his owne life, and had led them in the wilderneſſe, and given them that good Law that was in their wiſdome in the ſight of all the Nations, and by his praiers kept off Gods wrath from them. And who ever (of all thoſe *Heroes* wee read of) did ſo much for any Nation, who yet were continually murmuring at him, and had like once to have ſtoned him? And yet, what he had done for them did ſo mightily engage his heart, and ſo immoveably point and fixe it unto their good, that although God in his wrath againſt them, offered to make of him alone a greater and mightier Nation then they were, yet *Moſes* refuſed that offer (the greateſt that ever any Sonne of *Adam* was tempted with,) and ſtill went on to intercede for them, and among other uſed this very argument to God, even the conſideration of what hee had already done for them (as *with* what *great might and power, he had brought them out of Ægypt, &c.*) thereby to move God to continue his goodneſſe unto them, ſo *Exod.* 32.

32.11. and elſewhere; And this overcame God, as you may read in 14. *ver.* of the forenamed *Chap.* Yea, ſo ſet was *Moſes* his heart upon them, that he not onely refuſed that former offer which God made him, but he made an offer unto God of himſelfe, to ſacrifice his portion in life for their good: *Rather* (ſaies he) *blot me out of the book of life:* So *v.* 32. Part. 2.

And we may obſerve the like zealous love in holy *Paul*, towards all thoſe converts of his, whom in his Epiſtles he wrote unto; towards whom, that which ſo much endeared his affections, was the paines, the coſt, the travell, the care and ſufferings that he had in bringing them unto Chriſt. Thus towards the *Galatians*, how ſolicitous was he? How afraid to loſe his labour on them? *I am afraid of you, leſt I have beſtowed upon you labour in vain:* ſo he expreſſeth himſelfe, *Galat.* 4.11. and *verſe* 19. hee utters himſelfe yet more deepely; *My little children* (ſaies he) *of whom I again travaile in birth, untill Chriſt be formed in you.* He profeſſeth himſelf content to be in travail againe for them,

Part. 2. them, rather then loſe that, about which he had been in travell for them once before.

Now from both theſe examples whereof the one was Chriſts Type, and the other the very copy and paterne of Chriſt heart) we may raiſe up our hearts to the perſwaſion of that love and affection which muſt needs be in the heart of Chriſt, from that which he hath done and ſuffered for us.

Firſt, for *Moſes*, did *Moſes* ever doe that for that people, which Chriſt hath done and ſuffered for you? He acknowledged that he had *not borne that people in his wombe*, but Chriſt bare us all, and we were the *travaile of his ſoule*, and for us he endured the *birth-throwes of death* (as *Peter* calls them, *Acts* 2.24.) And then for *Paul*, *was Paul crucified for you?* (ſaies *Paul* likewiſe of himſelfe) but Chriſt was, and he ſpeaks it the more to enhaunce the love of Chriſt. Or if *Paul* had beene crucified, would, or could it have profited us? No: If therefore *Paul* was contented to have beene in travail again for the *Galatians*, when hee feared

feared their falling away; then how doth Chriſts heart worke much more towards ſinners? he having put in ſo infinite a ſtocke of ſufferings for us already, which he is loath to loſe; and hath ſo much love to us beſides, that if we could ſuppoſe, that otherwiſe we could not be ſaved, he could be content to be in travail againe, and to ſuffer for us afreſh: But he needed to do this but *once* (as the Apoſtle to the *Hebrewes* ſpeakes:) ſo *perfect* was his Prieſthood. Be aſſured then, that his love was not ſpent or worne out at his death, but encreaſed by it. His love it was that cauſed him to dye, and to *lay downe his life for his ſheep*; and *greater love then this, hath no man*, (ſaid himſelfe before he did it.) But now having dyed, this muſt needs cauſe him from his ſoul to cleave the more unto them. Part. 2.

A cauſe, or a perſon that a man hath ſuffered much for, according to the proportion of his ſufferings, is ones love and zeale thereunto; for theſe doe lay a ſtrong engagement upon a man: becauſe otherwiſe he loſeth the thankes and the ho-

Part. 2. honour of all that is already done and past by him. *Have you suffered so many things in vaine?* sayes the Apostle to the Galatians, *Chap.* 3.4. where he makes a motive and an incitement of it, that seeing they had endured so much for Christ, and the profession of him, they would not now lose al for want of doing a little more. And doth not the same dispositon remaine in Christ? Especially seeing the hard worke is over and dispatcht which he was to doe on earth; and that which now remains for him to do in Heaven, is far more sweet and full of glory, and as the *reaping in joy*, of what he had here *sowne in teares.* If his love was so great, as to hold out the enduring so much, then now when that brunt is over, and his love is become a tried love, will it not continue? If when tried in adversity, (and that is the sureſt and strongest love) and in the greatest adversity that ever was; if it then held, will it not still doe so in his prosperity much more? Did his heart sticke to us, and by us in the greatest temptation that ever was; and will his

his glorious and prosperous estate take it off, or abate his love unto us? Certainly no: [*Jesus the same to day, yesterday, and for ever.*] *Heb.* 13. 8. When he was in the midst of his paines, one for whom hee was then a suffering, said unto him, *Lord remember mee when thou commest into thy Kingdome*: and could Christ minde him then? (as you know he did, telling him, *This day shalt thou be with me in Paradise*) then surely when Christ came to Paradise, he would doe it much more, and remember him too, by the surest token that ever was, and which he can never forget, namely, the pains which he was then enduring for him. *He remembers both them and us still*, (as the Prophet speakes of God.) And if he would have us remember *his death till hee comes*, so to cause our heart to love him; then certainly himselfe doth it in Heaven much more: No question but he remembers us, as he promised to doe that good thiefe, now *He is in his Kingdome.* And so much for this second engagement. Part. 2.

Part. 2. A third engagement is the engagement of an *Office*, which still lies upon him, and requires of him all mercifulneſſe and graciouſneſſe towards ſinners that doe come unto him. And therefore whilſt he continues in that place, and inveſted with that office, (as he for ever doth) his heart muſt needs continue full of tenderneſſe and bowels. Now that office is the office of his *Prieſt-hood*; which this Text mentions, as the foundation of our encouragement to come *boldly to the Throne of grace, for grace and mercie,* ——— *ſeeing wee have a great High* [*Prieſt*] *entred into the Heovens.*

Two things I am to ſhew, to make up this Demonſtration:

Firſt, that this office of High-Prieſthood is an office erected wholly for the ſhewing of grace and mercy.

And ſecondly, that this office doth therefore lay upon Chriſt a duty to be in all his diſpenſations full of grace and mercie; and therefore his heart remaines moſt certainely ſuited and framed thereunto.

For

For the first, the office of High-Priesthood is altogether an office of grace : And I may call it the *Pardon-office*, set up and erected by God in Heaven ; and Christ, hee is appointed the Lord and Master of it. And as his *Kingly office* is an *office* of *power* and *dominion*, and his *Prophetical office* an office of *knowledge* and *wisedome* ; so his *Priestly office* is an office of *grace* and *mercy*. The high Priests office did properly deale in nothing else. If there had not been a *Mercy-seat* in the Holy of Holies, the high Priest had not at all been appointed to have gone into it. It was Mercy, and Reconciliation, and Attonement for sinners, that he was to treat about, and so to officiate for at the Mercy-seat ; hee had had otherwise no worke, nor any thing to doe when he should come into the most holy place. Now this was but a typicall alluſion unto this office of Christs in Heaven. And therefore the Apostle (in the Text) when he speaks of this our high Priests being entred into Heaven, hee makes mention of a *Throne of Grace*, and this Part. 2.

Part. 2. in answer to that in the Type both of the high Priest of old, and of the *Mercy-seat* in the Holy of Holies. And further to confirme this, the Apostle goes on to open that very Type, and to apply it unto Christ, unto this very purpose which wee have now in hand: And this in the very next words to my Text, *Chap.* 5. 1. 2. 3. *verses*; in which he gives a full description of an *high Priest*, and all the *properties* and requisites that were to bee in him, together with the eminent and principall *end* that that office was ordained for. Now the great and essentiall *qualifications* there specified, that were to bee in a high Priest, are *Mercy* and *Grace*, and the *ends* for which he is there said to be ordained, are workes of *Mercy* and *Grace*. And besides, what the words in their single standing doe hold forth to this purpose; observe that they come in to back and confirme that exhortation in the Text, wherein hee had set forth Christ as an *high Priest touched with the feeling of our infirmities*: And that therefore wee should *come with boldnesse for*

grace

grace and mercie: for every high Priest (sayes hee) *taken from among men, is ordained for men in things pertaining to God: that hee may offer both Gifts and Sacrifices for sinne. One who can have compassion, &c.* So that these words are a confirmation of what hee had before said, and doe set out Christ the substance, in his grace and mercifulnesse, under *Aaron* and his sonnes the shadowes: And all this for the comfort of Beleevers. Part. 2.

Now 1. for the *ends* for which those high Priests were appointed, they speake all nothing but grace and mercy unto sinners; it was said, he was one *ordained* [*for men*] *to offer both gifts and sacrifices for sinnes.* There is both the *finis cujus*, the end for *whom*, and the *finis cui*, the end for *which* he was ordained.

1. For *whom*, Hee was ordained for *men*, that is, for mens cause, and for their good. Had it not been for the salvation of men, God had never made Christ a *Priest*. So that hee is wholly to imploy all his interest and power for them,

Part. 2 for whose cause he was ordained a Priest, and that in all things that are between God and them. He is to transact τὰ πρὸς τὸν Θεὸν, all things that are to bee done by us *towards God*, or for us *with God*; he is to take up all our quarrels with God, and to mediate a reconciliation between us and him; He is to procure us all favour from God, and to doe all that which God would have done for our salvation. And that he might doe this willingly, kindly, and naturally for us, as every high Priest was *taken from among men*; so was Christ, that he might be a Priest of our owne kinde, and so be more kinde unto us, then the nature of an Angel could have been. And how much this conduceth to his being a mercifull High Priest, I shall shew anon.

2. The end for *which* every high Priest was ordained, shewes this. Hee was to *offer gifts and sacrifices for sinnes*: *Sacrifices for sinnes* to pacifie Gods wrath against sinne, and *gifts* to procure his favour. You know the Apostle in the foregoing words had mentioned *Grace* and

and *Mercy*, and encouraged us to come with boldneſſe unto this high Prieſt for both; and anſwerably, to encourage us the more, he ſayes, the high Prieſt by his office was to offer for both; *Gifts* for to procure all *grace*, and *ſacrifices* to procure all *mercie* for us, in reſpect of our *ſins*. Thus you ſee the ends which he is ordained for, are all matter of grace and mercy, and ſo of encouragement unto men for the obtaining of both, *verſ.* 1. Part. 2.

3. The *qualification* that was required in a high Prieſt, was, that he ſhould be *one, that could have compaſſion, &c.* and this is ſet forth, *verſ.* 2. Hee that was high Prieſt, was not choſen into that office for his deep wiſedome, great power, or exact holineſſe; but for the mercy and compaſſion that was in him. That is it which is here made the ſpeciall (and therefore the onely mentioned) property in an high Prieſt, *as ſuch*; and the ſpecificall and eſſential qualification that was inwardly and internally to conſtitute him, and fit him for that office: as Gods appointment did out-

Part. 2. wardly and externally, as *verse* 4. hath it. And the word [δυνάμενος] [*that can*, or *is able*] imports an inward faculty, a spirit, a disposition, a heart that knowes how to bee compassionate. And it is the same word that the Apostle had before used to expresse Christs heart by, even in the words of the Text, [δυνάμενον συμπαθῆσαι] that is, [*Who can be toucht with a feeling of our infirmities.*] And he had also used it of him afore that, in the point of mercy, *Chap.* 2. 18. [δυνατῶ, &c.] [*he is able*] to succour, which is not meant of any externall power, (which we usually call *ability*) but of an internall touch in his will; Hee hath an *heart able* to forgive, and to afford help.

Now therefore if this be so essentiall a property to an high Priest, *as such*; then it is in Christ most eminently. And as Christ had not been fit to have been Gods *King*, if hee had not had all power and strength in him, which is essentiall to constitute him a King; so nor to have beene Gods *high Priest*, if he had not had such an *heart* for mer-ci-

mercifulneſſe ; yea, and no longer to have been a Prieſt, then he ſhould continue to have ſuch a heart. Even as that which internally qualifies a *Miniſter* for the miniſtery is his *gifts*, which if he loſeth, he is no longer to be in that office : Or, as reaſon makes a man a *man*, which if hee loſeth hee becomes a beaſt : Thus no longer ſhould Chriſt continue to bee a Prieſt, then hee hath an heart that *can have compaſſion*, (as this ſecond verſe hath it.) And the word which wee tranſlate [*to have compaſſion*] is exceeding emphaticall, and the force of it obſervable ; it is in the Originall [μετριοπαθεῖν,] and ſignifies [*to have compaſſion according to every ones meaſure and proportion.*] Hee had ſaid of Chriſt in the words of my text, that he was *toucht with the feeling of our infirmities*, or that *hee had a ſuffering with us in all our evils:* and this word alſo here uſed imports a *ſuffering* : But then, ſome greatly diſtreſſed ſoules might queſtion thus ; though he pities me, and is affected, yet my miſery & ſins being great, wil he take them into the Part. 2.

Part. 2. full, lay them to heart, to pity mee according to the greatnes of them? To meet with this thought therefore, and to prevent even this objection about Christs pitty, the Apostle sets him out by what was the duty of the high Priest who was his shadow; that hee is one that *can have compassion according to the measure of every ones distresse*; and one that considers every circumstance in it, and will accordingly afford his pity and help, and if it bee *great*, he hath a great *fellow-feeling* of it: for he is a *great high Priest*: Thy *misery* can never exceed his *mercy*. The word here used comes from μέτρον, a *measure, and* πάθος, to *suffer*. And that it is the Apostles scope to hold this forth in this word, is evident by what follows: for he on purpose makes mention of those several degrees, proportions, and rankes of sinners under the old Law, who were capable of mercy and compassion, *who can have compassion*, (sayes hee) *on the* [*ignorant*] *and on them that are* [*out of the way.*] In the old Law you may read of severall degrees and kinds of sinnes for

for which God appointed or *measured* out differing and proportionable sacrifices. So for sins of *ignorance* there was one kinde of sacrifice, *Levit.* 4. *v.* 2. & 5. and another for sins *against knowledge*, or such as were wittingly committed, *Ch.* 6. *ver.* 2. 3. compared with *v.* 6. Now when any sinner came to the High-priest to make atonement for him, the Priest was wisely to consider the kind and the proportion of his sin; as whether it were a sin of meer ignorance, or whether it were against knowledge, & accordingly he was to proportion a sacrifice, and to mediate for him: And so he did μετριοπαθεῖν, *pity him according to measure*, or according to reason or discretion (as in the margent it is varied.) And therfore the Apostle here mentions both *the ignorant*, (that is, those that sinne out of meere ignorance) and *them that are gone out of the way*, namely, by wilfull and witting iniquity. And so by this property that was to be in the High-priest, doth he here set forth Christ. As the measure of any mans need and distresse is from sin and misery, accor- Part. 2.

Part. 2. dingly is he affected towards him. And as we have sins of several sizes; accordingly hath hee mercies, and puts forth a mediation proportionable; whether they bee ignorances, or sinnes of daily incursion, or else sinnes more grosse and presumptuous. And therefore let neither of them discourage any from comming unto Christ for grace and mercy.

So that (for the closure of this) here is both the *qualification* disposing him for this office, a *mercifull compassionateneſſe*; and here are the ends of this office, even to deale mercifully with all sorts of sinners *according to the proportion,* and *measure* of their sinnes and miseries. From each of which doe arise these Corolaries, which make up the demonstration in hand, as the conclusion: 1. That he is no longer fit for this place, then he continues to be of a gracious disposition, and one that *can have compassion.* 2. That hee can no longer be *faithfull* in the discharge of this office, (according to the ends for which it was appointed) then hee

he ſhews all grace and mercy unto them that come unto his throne of grace for it. Part. 2.

And that is the ſecond thing which I at firſt propounded; that this office did lay a duty upon him to have *compaſſion*: And it neceſſarily follows from the former. And anſwerably to confirme this, wee have both theſe two brought to our hands in one place together, (and which is a parallel place to this laſt interpreted) it is *Heb.* 2. 17. [*That he might be a mercifull and a faithfull High-Prieſt, &c.*] Hee is at once here ſaid to bee both *merciſull* and *faithfull*: And both are attributed to him, in reſpect of this High-Prieſts office, *faithfull* [*High-prieſt*:] and that, as it is to be executed in heaven, after the dayes of his fleſh ended. For the Apoſtle giving the reaſon of it, and ſhewing what it is that fits him to bee ſuch an High-prieſt, addes, *ver.* 18. [*In that himſelfe* [*hath*] *ſuffered*:] ſo that it relates to the time after his ſufferings ended. Now in that he is ſaid to be [*merciſull,*] this relates to that internall diſpoſition of his heart,

(before

Part. 2. before spoken of) qualifying him for this office; and in that he is said to be [*faithfull,*] that respects his execution of it; he is faithful in the discharge of the duty which that place layes on him.

So then, this goes further then the former, for it shews, that to exercise mercy, is the duty of his place, and that if he will be *faithfull*, he must be *mercifull*. For *faithfulnesse* in any office, imports an exact performance of something appointed by him, who designs one to that office, and that as a duty, & that this is a true description of *faithfulnesse*, and also that this *faithfulnesse* so described is in Christ, we have at once implyed, in that which immediately follows in the beginning of the 3. *Chap. ver.* 3. *Who was* (sayes the Apostle, going on to speake of Christ) *faithfull to him that appointed him, as Moses also was faithfull in all his house:* we have the same thing as expresly spoken in that forequoted place, *Heb.* 5. (in the next words to those we even now opened). *ver.* 3. *And by reason hereof* [*he ought to offer for sins.*]—he speakes it of Christs Type,

Type, the High-prieſt, (as the former alſo he had done.) But thereby to ſhew that it is Chriſts duty alſo to mediate for all that come to him, *Hee ought to doe it.* Now then to enforce this conſideration, for the helpe of our faith herein; If this office doth by Gods appointment thus binde him to it, and if it bee the duty of his place, then certainly he will performe it moſt exactly, for elſe he doth not do his duty. And our comfort may be, that his *faithfulneſſe* lies in being mercifull; therefore (you ſee) they are both here joyned together. Every one is to doe the proper duty of his place, and exactly to ſee to that. And therefore the Apoſtle, *Rom.* 12. exhorting to the diſcharge of the duties of each office in the Church, *ver.* 7. he ſayes, *Let him that hath a Miniſtry* committed to him, *wait on his Miniſtry*; and among others) if his place of miniſtration be to *ſhew mercy*, (as *ver.* 8.) (which was an office in the Church, upon which lyed the care of the *poore* and *ſicke*) he is *to doe it with cheerfulneſſe.* And ſo ſayes Chriſt of himſelfe, Part. 2.

Part. 2. himselfe, *Esay* 61. 1,2, *The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, to bind up the broken hearted, to open the prison doores to them that are bound*, (to visite and relieve them) *and to preach good tidings to the meeke.* Such kind of soules are they that hee hath the charge of. Hee is *the great shepheard and Bishop of soules*, 1 *Pet.* 2. *ult.* and the *sicke*, and the *broken*, they are his sheep, his charge, his Diocese, as *Ezekiel* hath it, *Chap.* 34. 16. And to tend such as these, he looks for ever upon it as his duty, as his own expression upon the like occasion importeth, in *John* 10.16. *Other sheep I have* (sayes Christ) *them I* [*must*] *bring, &c.* Observe how he puts a [δεῖ] an [*I must*] upon it; looking at it as his duty, strictly laid upon him by his place of being a Shepheard. And the proper duty of his place being *to shew mercy*, he doth it *with cheerefulnesse*, (as the Apostle speaks:) For Mercy makes one doe what they doe, with cheerfulnesse. And Christ, as hee is the *Bishop*, so the Διάκονος, the *Deacon* also, (for hee beares all offices to his Church) as of the

the *circumcision*, ſo of the *uncircumciſion* alſo: ſo he is called, *Rom.* 15. 8. And theſe offices of *High-Prieſt*, *Shepheard*, *Biſhop*, *&c.* hee hath ſtill in Heaven; for *he continues a Prieſt for ever*, Hebrewes 7. 24. Part. 2.

Now therefore to conclude this Head: Never feare that Chriſts great advancement in Heaven, ſhould any whit alter his diſpoſition; for this his very advancement engageth him the more. For although he be *entered into the Heavens*; yet conſider withall that it is here added, [to be an *High-prieſt*] there; and ſo long feare not: for his place it ſelfe will call for mercy from him unto them that treat with him about it. And although in the Heavens hee be *advanced far above all principalities and powers*, yet ſtill his High-Prieſthood goes with him, and accompanies him: For *ſuch an High-Prieſt became us, as was higher then the heavens*, *Heb.* 7. 26. And further, though he ſits at Gods right hand, and on his Fathers Throne, yet that throne it is a *throne of grace* (as the Text hath it) upon which

Part. 2. which he sits. And as the *Mercy-seat* in the Type was the farthest and highest thing in the Holy of Holies; so the *Throne of grace* (which is an infinite encouragement unto us) is the highest seat in heaven. So that if Christ will have, and keep the greatest place in Heaven, the highest preferment that Heaven it selfe can bestow upon him, it engageth him unto grace and mercy. The highest honour there hath this Attribute of *Grace* annexed to it in its very title, [*A throne of grace:*] And as *Solomon* sayes, *A Kings Throne is established by righteousnesse*, it continues firme by it; so is Christs Throne by *Grace*. Grace was both the first founder of his Throne, or his raiser to it, and also it is the establisher of it.

First, it is the *founder* of it; For the reason why God did set him up in that place, was, because hee had more grace and mercy in his heart, then all the creatures had, or could bee capable of. All Favourites are usually raised for something that is eminent in them, either beauty, pleasantnesse of wit, State-Policie, or the like. Now if you ask what

what moved God to advance Christ to this high Throne, it was his grace: So *Psal.*45.3. [*Grace*] *is poured into thy lips*, (and so dwells much more in his heart) [*Therefore God hath blessed thee*: (so it followes:) namely, with all those glories in Heaven (which are Gods blessings to his Son.) Part. 2.

And then secondly, Grace is the *upholder* of his Throne: so *ver.*4. of the aforesaid *Psal* 45. *In thy Majesty —prosper thou*; as well *because of meekenesse*, as of *righteousnesse*, and also because of *Truth*; that is, the word of truth, the Gospell of our salvation, (as *Paul* exegetically expoundeth it *Ephes.*1.13.) These are the pillars and supporters of his Throne and Majesty: And there are *two* of them, you see, that are of *grace*, (*meekneſſe*, and the *Gospell of our salvation*) unto *one* of *justice* or *righteousnesse*; and yet that one is for us too. And these *establish* Christs Throne: So it followes, *verse 6. Thy Throne, O God, is for ever and ever*: And you know who applies this unto Christ, *Heb.*1.8. Feare not then, when as *meekneſſe* sup-

Part. 2. ſupports his *Majeſty* and *Grace* his *Throne*; and when as he holds his place by ſhewing theſe. And thus much from that office that is laid upon Chriſt as he is a *Prieſt*.

A 4. engagement, which added to the former, may mightily helpe our faith in this, is, his *own intereſt*; both in that our ſalvation is the purchaſe of his bloud, and alſo that his owne joy, comfort, happineſſe, and glory are encreaſed and enlarged by his ſhewing grace and mercy, in pardoning, relieving, and comforting his members here on earth, under all their infirmities. So that, beſides the obligation of an office undertaken by him for us, there is the addition of a mighty intereſt of his own, coincident therewith, to fixe his heart unto *faithfulneſſe* for us, in all that doe concerne us. Wee ſee that Advocates and Atturneyes who plead for others, although that they have no ſhare in the eſtate for which they plead, no title to, or intereſt therein; yet when they have undertaken a Clients cauſe, (if honeſt) how diligent will they be to promote and carry it for *that* their

their Client, ſimply becauſe it is their office, and the duty of their place; and yet they have but a very ſmall Fee given them, in compariſon of that eſtate which oft-times they follow ſuit about: How much more would their diligence bee whetted, if the Lands and Eſtates they ſue for, were their owne, or a purchaſe of theirs for their wives joynture, or childrens portions? Now ſuch is the pardoning of our ſins, the ſalvation of our ſoules, and the comforting of our hearts unto Chriſt; theſe are the purchaſe of Chriſts blood, and whilſt he is exerciſed in promoving theſe, he doth good to his own child and Spouſe, &c. which is in effect a doing good unto himſelfe. Yea, to doe theſe, bringeth in to himſelfe more comfort and glory, then it procures to them. And therefore the Apoſtle in the beginning of the following Chapter, (namely, *Heb.* 3.) ſayes, that Chriſt is engaged to Faithfulneſſe in the execution of his Office, not as a meere *ſervant* onely, who is betruſted by his Maſter, but as an *owner*, who hath an in- Part. 2.

Part. 2. intereſt of poſſeſſion in the things committed to his care, and a revenue from theſe: So *ver.* 5. *Moſes verily*, ſaies he, *was faithfull as a ſervant in Gods houſe; but Chriſt as a Son over his owne houſe*, (that is, as an Heire of all) *Whoſe houſe* (or family) *are we*, (ſaies the Apoſtle,) *ver.* 6. If a Phyſitian for his fee will be faithfull, although he be a ſtranger; much more will he be ſo if hee be Father to the Patient, (ſo as his owne life and comfort are bound up in that of the childs) or when much of his eſtate and commings in are from the life of the party unto whom he miniſters phyſicke: In ſuch a caſe they ſhall bee ſure to want for no care and coſt, and to lacke no Cordialls that will comfort them, no means that will cure them, and keep them healthfull, and no fit diet that may nouriſh and ſtrengthen them. As the care of that Prince of the Eunuchs, in the firſt of *Daniel*, was, to have thoſe children committed to his charge to eat and drinke of the beſt, becauſe that on their looks and good liking his place depended: Now ſo God hath

hath ordered it, even for an everla- Part. 2.
ſting obligation of Chriſts heart unto us, that his giving grace, mercy, and comfort to us, is one great part of his glory, and of the revenue of his happineſſe in Heaven, and of his inheritance there.

Firſt, to explaine how this may be, conſider, that the Humane nature of Chriſt in Heaven hath a double capacity of glory, happineſſe, and delight; One in that neer fellowſhip and communion with his Father, and the other Perſon, through his perſonall union with the Godhead. Which joy of his in this fellowſhip, Chriſt himſelfe ſpeakes of, *Pſal.* 19. *ver. ult.* as to be enjoyed by him, *In thy preſence is [fulneſſe of joy,] and at thy right hand are pleaſures for evermore.* And this is a conſtant and ſettled fulneſſe of pleaſure; ſuch as admits not any addition or diminution, but is alwaies one and the ſame, and abſolute and entire in it ſelfe; and of it ſelfe alone ſufficient for the Sonne of God, and Heire of all things to live upon, though he ſhould have had no other commings in of joy and de-

Part. 2. delight from any creature. And this is his naturall inheritance.

But God hath bestowed upon him another capacity of glory, and a revenue of pleasure to come in another way, and (answerably) another *fulnesse*, namely, from his Church and Spouse, which is his Body. Thus *Eph.* 1. when the Apostle had spoke the highest things of Christs personall advancement in Heaven that could be uttered, as of his *sitting downe at Gods right hand far above all principalities and powers, &c. ver.* 20. 21. yet *ver* 22. he adds this unto all, *And gave him to be an Head to the Church, which is his Body, the* [*fulnesse*] *of him who filleth all in all.* So that although he of himselfe personally be so full, (the fulnesse of the God-head dwelling in him) that he overflows to the filling all things: yet he is pleased to account (and it is so in the reality) his Church & the salvation of it to be another *fulnesse* unto him, superadded unto the former. As Sonne of God he is compleat, and that of himselfe: but as an Head, hee yet hath another additionall fulnesse

neſſe of joy from the good and happineſſe of his members. And as all pleaſure is the companion, and the reſult of action, ſo this ariſeth unto him, from his exerciſing acts of grace, and from his continuall doing good unto, and for thoſe his members, or (as the Apoſtle expreſſeth it) from *his filling them* with all mercy, grace, comfort, and felicity: Himſelfe becomming yet more *full*, by *filling* them, and this is his inheritance alſo, as that other was. So as a double inheritance Chriſt hath to live upon: One perſonall, & due unto him (as he is the Son of God) the firſt moment of his Incarnation, ere he had wrought one piece of worke towards our ſalvation. Another acquired, purchaſed, and merited by his having performed that great ſervice and obedience: And certainely, beſides the glory of his Perſon, there is the glory of his Office, of Mediatorſhip, and of Headſhip to his Church: And though he is never ſo full of himſelfe, yet hee deſpiſeth not this part of his revenue that comes in from below. Thus Part. 2.

Part. 2. Thus much for explication.

Now ſecondly, for the confirmation & making up the demonſtration in hand. This ſuperadded glory and happineſſe of Chriſt is enlarged and encreaſed, ſtill as his members come to have the purchaſe of his death more and more laid forth upon them: So as when their ſins are pardoned, their hearts more ſanctified, and their ſpirits comforted, then comes Hee to ſee the fruit of his Labour, and is comforted thereby, for he is the more glorified by it: yea he is much more pleaſed and rejoyced in this, then themſelves can be. And this muſt needs keep up in his heart his care and love unto his children here below, to *water* and refreſh them *every moment*, as (*Eſay* ſpeaks, *Cap.* 27. 3.) For in thus putting forth acts of grace and favour, and in doing good unto them, he doth but good unto himſelfe, which is the ſureſt engagement in the world. And therefore the Apoſtle exhorts men to love their wives, upon this ground, that in ſo doing, they love themſelves: (*Eph.*

(*Ephes.*5.28. *So ought men to love their wives, as their own bodies: He that loveth his wife loveth himself:*) so strict and neere is that relation. Now the same doth hold true of Christ in His loving his Church. And therefore in the same place, the love of Christ unto his Church is held forth as the pattern and exemplar of ours, so *ver.*25. [*Even as Christ also loved the Church.*] And so it may well be argued thence by comparing the one speech with the other, that Christ in loving his Church, doth but love himselfe; and then, the more love and grace he shews unto the Members of that his Body, the more he shews love unto himselfe. And accordingly it is further added there, *ver.* 27. that he daily *washeth and cleanseth his Church*, (that is, both from the guilt and power of sinne) *that he might present it to* [*himselfe*] *a glorious Church, not having spot or wrinkle, &c.* Observe, it is to [*himselfe.*] So that all that he doth for his members is for himselfe, as truly, yea more fully then for them; and his share of glory out of theirs is greater then theirs, by how much the glory of the cause is greater then that of the Part. 2.

Part. 2. effect. And thus indeed the Scripture ſpeaks of it: as, whilſt it calls the Saints the *glory of Chriſt*: So 2 *Cor.* 8. 23. And Chriſt, in *John* 17. 13. and *ver.* 22, 23. ſayes, that he is *glorified in them*. And *Pſal.* 45. where Chriſt is ſet forth as *Solomon* in all his royalty and majeſty; yet *ver.* 11. he is ſaid *greatly to deſire* or *delight* in the *beauty* of his Queen; that is, the graces of the Saints; and that not with an ordinary delight, but he *greatly deſires*; his deſire is encreaſed as her beauty is: For that is there brought in as a motive unto her to be more holy and conformed unto him, *to encline her eare, and forſake her Fathers houſe, ver.* 10. [*So*] *ſhall the King greatly deſire thy beauty.* Chriſt hath a beauty that pleaſeth him, as well as we have, though of another kinde; and therefore ceaſeth not till he hath got out every *ſpot* and *wrinkle* out of his Spouſes face, (as we heard the Apoſtle ſpeake even now) *ſo to preſent her glorious unto himſelfe*; that is, delightfull and pleaſing in his eye. And ſuitably unto this (to confirme us yet more in it) Chriſt in that Sermon which was his ſolemne farewell before his going to heaven, aſ-

ſures

sures his Disciples that his heart would be so farre from being weaned from them, that his joy would still be in them, to see them prosper and bring forth fruit; so *John* 15. 9, 10, 11. where his scope is to assure them of the continuance of his love unto them when he should be gone; so *ver.* 9, 10. *As my Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: Continue in my love, &c.* As if he had said, Feare not you my love, nor the continuance of it in my absence; but look you to doe your duty, &c. And to give them assurance of this, he further tels them, that even when he is in heaven, in the greatest fulnes of pleasure at Gods right hand, yet even then his *joy will be in them*, and in their well doing; so *ver.* 11. *These things have I spoken unto you that my joy may remaine in you, and that your joy may be full.* He speaks just like a Father that is taking his leave of his children, and comforting them at his departure, and giving them good counsell, to take good courses when he is gone from them, *to keep his Commandements*, and to *love one another*; so *ver.* 10, & 12. and backs it with this motive, so shall *my joy remain in you*, Part. 2.

Part. 2. (it is as Fathers use to speake) and it will be for your good too, *your joy will be* also *full*. To open which words a little, the word [*remaine*] used concerning their *abiding in his love*, and his *joy abiding* in them, is used in reference to the continuing of both these towards them in Heaven. And when Christ sayes, *That my joy may remain in you*, it is as if he had said, that I may even in Heaven have cause to rejoyce in you, when I shall heare and know of you that you agree and are loving each to other, and keepe my Commandements. The joy which he there calls *His joy*, [*My*] *joy*, is not to be understood *Objectivè*, of *Their* joy in *Him*, as the object of it; but *Subjective*, of the joy that should be in himselfe, and which he should have in them. So *Augustine* long since interpreted it: *Quodnam* (sayes he) *est illud gaudium Christi* [*in nobis*] *nisi quod ille dignatur gaudere* [*de nobis?*] what is Christs joy *in us*, but that which he vouchsafeth to have of and *for us?* And it is evident by this, that otherwise if it were their joy which he meant in that first sentence, then that other that followes, [*And your*

joy

joy shall be full] were a Tautologie. He speakes therefore of his joy and theirs, as of two distinct things: and both together were the greatest motives that could be given to encourage and quicken his Disciples in obedience. Now take an estimate of Christs heart herein, from those two holy Apostles, *Paul* and *John*; who were smaller resemblances of this in Christ. What (next to immediate communion with Christ himself) was the greatest joy they had to live upon in this world, but only the fruit of their Ministery appearing in the graces both of the lives and hearts of such as they had begotten unto Christ? See how *Paul* utters himselfe, 1 *Thes.* 2. 19. *What is our hope*, (sayes he) *or joy, or crown of rejoycing? Ye are our glory and our joy*, *ver.* 20. And in the 3. *Epist.* of JOHN, *ver.* 3. *John* sayes the like, that he *greatly rejoyced* of that good testimony he had heard of *Gaius*; *For* (sayes he) *I have no greater joy then to heare that my children walke in the truth*, *ver.* 4. Now what were *Paul* and *John* but instruments by whom they beleeved and were begotten? and not on whom: Neither of these were Part. 2.

Part. 2. crucified for them; nor were these children of theirs *the travaile of their soules*: How much more then unto Christ, (whose interest in us and our welfare is so infinitely much greater) must his members be his joy and his crown? And to see them to come in to him for grace and mercy, and to *walke in truth*, rejoyceth him much more; for he thereby *sees of the travaile of his soule*, and so is *satisfied*. Certainly, what *Solomon* sayes of Parents, *Prov.* 10. 1. that *a wise sonne maketh a glad father, &c.* is much more true of Christ. Holinesse, and fruitfulnesse, and comfortablenesse in our spirits, while we are here below, doe make glad the heart of Christ, our *everlasting Father*. Himselfe hath said it, I beseech you beleeve him, and carry your selves accordingly. And if part of his joy arise from hence, that we thrive and doe well; then doubt not of the continuance of his affections: for love unto himselfe will continue them towards us, and readinesse to embrace and receive them when they come for grace and mercy.

5. There is a fifth Engagement, which his very having our nature, (which he

he ſtill weares in heaven) and which the end or intention which God had in ordaining Chriſts aſſuming it, doe put upon him for ever: For one great end and project of that perſonall union of our nature unto the Godhead in the ſecond perſon for ever, was, that he might be a *merciſull High-Prieſt*. So that as his *office* layes it as a duty upon him, ſo his becomming a *Man* qualifies him for that office, and the performance of it, (and ſo may afford a farther demonſtration of the point in hand.) This we finde both to have been a *requiſite* in our High-Prieſt, to qualifie him the better for mercy and bowels; and alſo one of thoſe great *ends* which God had in that aſſumption of our nature. Part. 2.

Firſt, a *requiſite*, on purpoſe to make him the more *merciſull*. So *Heb.* 5. 1. (the place even now inſiſted on, when yet this primary qualification I then paſſed over, and reſerved unto this mention) it is ſaid, *Every High-Prieſt* [*taken from among men*] *is ordained for men*, (and that, to this end) *that ſo he might be one that can have compaſſion*; namely, with a pity that is naturall and kindly; ſuch as a man beares

Part. 2. to one of his own kinde: For otherwise the Angels would have made higher and greater High-Priests then one of our nature; but then they would not have pityed men, as men doe their brethren, of the same kinde and nature with them.

And secondly, this was also Gods *end* and *intention* in ordaining Christs assumption of our nature, which that other place before cited, (namely, *Heb.* 2. 16, 17.) holds forth; *Verily he tooke not on him the nature of Angels, but the seed of Abraham*; That is, an humane nature, and that made too of the same stuffe that ours is of, and it *behoved him to be made like us in all things*, [*that*] *he might be a mercifull High-priest, &c.* [ἵνα ἐλεήμων γένηται] *To the end he might become*, or *be made mercifull.*

But was not the Sonne of God as mercifull (may some say) without the taking of our nature, as afterwards when he had assumed it? Or is his mercy thereby made larger then of it selfe it should have been, had he not tooke the humane nature on him?

I answer, Yes, he is as mercifull, but yet

1. Here-

1. Hereby is held forth an evident demonſtration (and the greateſt one that could have been given unto men) of the everlaſting continuance of Gods mercies unto men: by this, that God is for everlaſting become a man; and ſo we thereby aſſured, that he will be mercifull unto men, who are of his own nature, and that for ever: For as his union with our nature is for everlaſting; ſo thereby is ſealed up to us the continuation of theſe his mercies, to be for everlaſting: So that he can, and will no more ceaſe to be mercifull to men, then himſelf can now ceaſe to be a man, which can never be. And this was the end of that aſſumption. Part. 2.

But ſecondly, that was not all: His taking our nature not onely addes unto our faith, but ſome way or other even to his being mercifull. Therefore it is ſaid, [*That he might be made mercifull, &c.*] That is, mercifull in ſuch a way, as otherwiſe God of himſelfe alone had never been; namely, even [*as a man.*] So that this union of both natures, *God* and *Man*, was projected by God to make up the rareſt compound of grace and mercy in

Part. 2. the result of it, that ever could have been; and thereby fully fitted and accomodated to the healing and saving of our soules. The greatnesse of that mercy that was in God, that contributes the stock and treasury of those mercies to be bestowed on us: and unto the greatnesse of these mercies nothing is, or could be added, by the humane nature assumed; but rather, Christs Manhood had all his largenesse of mercy from the Deity: So that had he not had the mercies of God to enlarge his heart towards us, he could never have held out to have for ever been mercifull unto us. But then, this humane nature assumed, *that addes a new way* of being mercifull: It assimilates all these mercies, and makes them the mercies of a *man*: it makes them humane mercies, and so gives a naturalnesse and kindlinesse unto them to our capacitie. So that God doth now in as kindly and as naturall a way pity us, who are flesh of his flesh, and bone of his bone, as a man pities a man: Thereby to encourage us to come to him, and to be familiar with God, and treat with him for grace and mercy, as a man would

would doe with a man; as knowing Part. 2.
that in that man Christ Jesus (whom we beleeve upon) God dwels, and his mercies worke in and through his heart in an humane way.

I will no longer insist upon this notion now, because I shall have occasion to touch upon it againe, and adde unto it under that next third generall Head, of shewing the *way how* Christs heart is affected towards sinners: Onely take we notice, what comfort this may afford unto our faith, that Christ must cease to be a man, if he continue not to be mercifull; seeing the very plot of his becomming a man, was, that he might be mercifull unto us, and that in a way so familiar to our apprehensions, as our owne hearts give the experience of the like, which otherwise (as God) he was not capable of. And adde but this bold word to it (though a true one) that he may now as soon cease to be God, as to be a man. The humane nature, (after he had once assumed it) being raised up to all the naturall rights of the Sonne of God; whereof one (and that now made naturall unto him) is, to continue for ever united: And he

may

Part. 2. may as soon cease to be either, as to be ready to shew mercy. So that not onely the scope of Christs office, but also the intention of his assuming our nature, doth lay a farther engagement upon him, and that more strong then any, or all the former.

THE

THE HEART OF Christ in Heaven, *Towards* Sinners on Earth.

PART III.

HEB. 4. 15.

For we have not an High-Priest who cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities, but was in all things tempted like as we are, yet without sin.

§. I.

Some generals to cleare how this is to be understood, That Christs *Heart is* touched with the feeling of our infirmities, *together with the* way *how our* infirmities *come to be feelingly let into his Heart.*

HAving thus given such full and ample *Demonstrations* of the tenderneſſe and ſameneſſe of Chriſts Heart unto us now he is in Heaven, with that which it was whilſt

Part. 3. whilst he was here on earth; and those both *extrinsecall* (in the *first part*) and *intrinsecall* (in the *second.*) I now come to that last Head which I propounded in the opening of these words, namely, the *way* and *manner* of Christs being *affected* with *pity* unto us; both how it is to be understood by us, and also how such affections come to be let into his heart, and therein to work these bowels of compassion unto us. This in the beginning of the *Second Part* I propounded to be handled, as being necessary both for the opening and clearing the words of the Text, (which mainly hold forth this) as also for the clearing of the thing it selfe, the point in hand. For (as I there shewed) these words come in by way of pre-occupation or prevention of an objection, as if his state now in heaven were not capable of such affections as should tenderly move him to pity and commiseration, he being now glorified both in soul and body. Which thought, because it was apt to arise in all mens minds, the Apostle therefore fore-stalls it, both by affirming the contrary, [*We have not an High-priest that cannot be touched, &c.*] that

that is, he both *can be*, (or, is capable of it) and likewiſe *is* touched, notwithſtanding all his glory; as alſo by annexing the reaſon of it, or ſhewing the way how it comes to paſſe, in that *in all points he was tempted like as we are.* Part. 3.

Now in handling and opening theſe, (which is a matter full of difficulty) I ſhall with all warineſſe proceed to the diſcovery of what manner of affection in Chriſt this is, and that by theſe ſteps and degrees.

1. This affection of compaſſion, or his being *touched with the feeling of our infirmities*, is not wholly to be underſtood in a metaphoricall or a ſimilitudinary ſenſe, as thoſe ſpeeches uſed of God in the Old Teſtament are to be underſtood, when *bowels* of compaſſion are attributed unto him, and his *bowels* are ſaid to be *rowled together*; or as when as it it is ſaid of God, that he *repented*, and was *afflicted in all his peoples afflictions*. All which expreſſions were ſpoken of God, (as we all know) but meerly κατ' ἀνθρωποπάθειαν *after the manner of men*; ſo to convey and repreſent to our apprehenſions, by what affections uſe to be in parents

Part. 3. rents or friends in such and such cases, (what provoke them unto such and such actions,) which like effects proceed from God towards us when he sees us in distresse. And so they are spoken rather *per modum Effectus*, then *Affectus*, rather by way of like *Effect* which God produceth, then by way of such Affection in Gods heart, which is not capable of any such passions as these are. Now towards the right understanding of this, the first thing which I affirme is, that (barely) in such a sense as this, that which is here spoken of Christ, is not to be understood; and my reason for it is grounded upon these two things put together: First, that this affection of his towards us here spoken of, is manifestly meant of his *humane nature*, and not of his Godhead onely, for it is spoken of that nature wherein he once was *tempted* as we now are. So expresly in the next words, which can be meant of no other then his humane nature.

And Secondly, That those kinde of expressions which were used of God before the Assumption of our nature, onely in a way of metaphor and

and ſimilitude *after the manner of men*) ſhould in no further or more reall and proper ſenſe be ſpoken of Chriſt and his humane nature now aſſumed, and when he is a man as truly and properly as we are, I cannot imagine; when I conſider and remember that which I laſt inſiſted on, that one end of Chriſts taking an humane nature, was, *that he might be a* [*merciſull*] *High-Prieſt forever*; in ſuch a way, as he being God alone, could not have been. I confeſſe I have often wondred at that expreſſion there uſed, *Heb.* 2. *He took the ſeed of Abraham, that he might be made a merciful High-prieſt*: wch at the firſt reading ſounded, as if God had been made more merciſull by taking our nature. But this ſolved the wonder, that this aſſumption added a new way of Gods being merciſull: By meanes of which it may now be ſaid, (for the comfort and reliefe of our faith) that God is truly and really merciſull, *as a man*. And the conſideration of this contributes this to the clearing of the thing in hand, that whereas God of himſelfe was ſo bleſſed and perfect, that his bleſſedneſſe could not have been touched with the Part. 3.

leaſt

Part. 3. least feeling of our infirmities; neither was he in himself capable of any such affection of pitty or compassion; *He is not as a man that he should pitty or repent, &c.* He can indeed doe that for us in our distresse, which a man that pitties us useth to doe: but the affections and bowels themselves he is not capable of. Hence therefore, amongst other ends of assuming mans nature, this fell in before God as one, that God might thereby become loving and mercifull unto men, as one man is to another. And so, that what before was but *improperly* spoken, and by way of *Metaphor* and similitude in the Old Testament, so to convey it to our apprehensions, might now be truly attributed unto him in the reality; that God might be for ever said to be *compassionate as a man*, and to be *touched with a feeling of our infirmities as a man.* And thus by this happy union of both Natures, the language of the Old Testament uttered onely in a figure, becomes verified and fulfilled in the truth of it, as in all other things the shadowes of it were in Christ fulfilled. And this is the first step towards the understanding

ſtanding of what is here ſaid of Chriſt taken from this compariſon with the like attributed unto God himſelfe. Part. 3.

A ſecond and further ſtep to let in our underſtanding to the apprehenſion of this, is by the like further compariſon to be made with the Angels, and thoſe affections of love and pitty that are certainly found in them. In compariſon of which, theſe affections in Chriſts humane nature (though glorified) muſt needs be far more like to ours, even more tender, and more humane: For in that *Heb.* 2. it is expreſly ſaid, *He* therefore *tooke not the nature of the Angels, that he might be a mercifull High-Prieſt.* Part of the intendment of thoſe words is to ſhew and give the reaſon, not onely why he took our nature under fraile fleſh, (though that the Apoſtle mentions, *ver.* 14.) but why an humane nature for the ſubſtance of it, and not the nature of Angels: Becauſe in his affections of mercy he would for ever come neerer to us, and have ſuch affections, and of the ſame kind with ours. Whereas otherwiſe in other reſpects, an Angel would have been an higher & more glorious High-Prieſt then a man.

Now

Part. 3. Now the Angels being *fellow-servants* with us, (as the Angel called himselfe, *Rev.* 22. 2.) they have affections towards us more assimilated vnto ours, then God hath; and so are more capable of such impressions from our miseries, then God is. Although they be *Spirits*, yet they partake of something analogicall, or resembling and answering to those affections of pity, griefe, &c. which are in us. And indeed, so far as these affections are seated in our soules, and not drencht in the passions of the body, (unto which our soules are united) they are the very same kinde of affections in us, that are in them. Hence the *same lusts* that are in *men*, are said to be in *devils*, *John* 8. 44. and therefore the *devils* also are said to *fear* and *tremble*, &c. And so (oppositely) the same affections that are in men, so farre as they are spirituall, and the spirit or soule is the seat of them, they must needs be found in the good Angels. But Christ having an humane nature, the same for substance that ours is, consisting both of soule and body, although through glory made *spirituall*, yet not become a *Spirit*, (*A Spirit*

Spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have, sayes Christ of himselfe, after his Resurrection, *Luke* 24.39.) therefore he must needs have affections towards us yet, more like to these of ours then those are which the Angels have. So then by these two steps we have gained these two things, That even in Christs humane nature, (though glorified) affections of pity and compassion are true and reall and not metaphorically attributed to him as they are unto God; and also more neere and like unto ours here, then those in the Angels are; even affections proper to mans nature, and truly humane. And these he should have had, although this humane nature had from the very first assumption of it been as glorious as it is now in heaven. Parr. 3.

But now thirdly, add this (further) that God so ordered it, that before Christ should cloathe this his humane nature with that glory he hath in heaven, and put this glory upon it, he should first take it as cloathed with all our infirmities, even the very same that doe cleave unto us, and should live in this world, as we doe, for many

Part. 3. ny yeeres. And during that time, God prepared for him all sorts of afflictions and miseries to runne through, which we our selves doe here meet withall; and all that time he was acquainted with, and inured unto all the like sorrowes that we are: and God left him to that infirmity and tendernesse of spirit, to take in all distresses as deeply as any of us, (without sinne) and to exercise the very same affections under all these distresses that we at any time doe find stirring in our hearts: And this God thus ordered, on purpose thereby to fit him, and to frame his heart (when he should be in glory) unto such affections as these, spoken of in the Text. And this both this Text suggests to be Gods end in it, as also that fore-mentioned place, *Heb.* 2. 13. *For as much as we* (namely, his members) *are partakers of flesh and bloud,* (which phrase doth ever note out the frailties of mans nature, as 1 *Cor.* 15. 50. &c.) *he himself took part of the same,---that he might be a mercifull High-Priest, &c. ver.* 17. And then the Apostle gives this reason of it, *ver.* 18. [*For in that himself hath suffered, being tempted, he*

is

is able (this *Ability* is (as was before interpreted) the having an heart fitted and enabled, out of experience, to pity and) *to succour them that are tempted.* The meaning of which is, that it was not the bare taking of an humane nature (if glorious from the first) that would thus fully have fitted him to be affectionately pitifull out of experience (though (as was said) the knowledge of our miseries taken in thereby, would have made him truly and really affectionate towards us, with affections humane and proper to a man; and so, much neerer and liker ours then what are in the Angels themselves, or then are attributed to God, when he is said to pity us) but further, his taking our nature at first cloathed with frailties, and living in this world as we; This hath for ever fitted his heart by experience to be in our very hearts and bosomes; and not onely or barely to know the distresse, and as a man to be affected with an humane affection to one of his kinde; but experimentally, remembring the like in himself once. And this likewise the text suggests as the way whereby our distresses are let into his heart the more Part. 3.

Part. 3. feelingly now he is in heaven. *We have not an High Priest that cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities* [*but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.*] And the more to comfort us herein, observe how fully and universally the Apostle speakes of Christs having beene tempted here below. First, for the *matter* of them, or the severall sorts of temptations, he sayes he was tempted κατὰ πάντα, *in all points*, or things of any kinde, wherewith we are exercised. Secondly, for the *manner*, (he addes that too) καθ' ὁμοιότητα, *like as we are*. His heart having been just *so* affected, *so* wounded, pierced, and distressed, in all such tryals as ours use to be, onely *without sinne*. God (on purpose) left all his affections to their full tenderesse, and quicknesse of sense of evill. So that Christ took to heart all that befell him, as deeply as might be; he slighted no crosse either from God or men, but had and felt the utmost load of it. Yea, his heart was made more tender in all sorts of affections then any of ours, (even as it was in love and pity) and this made him *a man of sorrowes*, and that more then

any

any other man was, or shall be. Part. 3.

Now therefore, to explicate the *way* how our miseries are let into his heart, and come to stir up such kindly affections of pity and compassion in him, it is not hard to conceive from what hath now been said, and from what the Text doth further hint unto us.

1. The understanding and knowledge of that humane nature hath notice and cognisance of all the occurrences that befall his members here. And for this the Text is cleare: For the Apostle speakes this for our encouragement, That *Christ is touchd with the feeling of our infirmities*: which could not be a relieſe unto us, if it supposed not this, that he particularly and distinctly knew them; And if not all as well as some, we should want relieſe in all, as not knowing which he knew, and which not. And the Apostle affirmes this of his humane nature, (as was said) for he speaks of that nature that was *tempted* here below. And therefore *the Lambe that was slaine*, and so *the man Christ Jesus*, is *Revel.* 5. 6. said to have *seven eyes*, as well as *seven hornes*; which seven

Part. 3. eyes are *the seven Spirits sent forth into all the earth.* His eyes of Providence (through his annointing with the Holy Ghost) are in all corners of the world, and view all the things that are done under the Sun; in like manner he is there said to have *seven hornes* for power, as *seven eyes* for knowledge; and both are defined to be *seven*, to shew the perfection of both; in their extent, reaching unto all things: So that, as *all power in heaven and earth is committed unto Him* as *Sonne of man*, (as the Scripture speaks) so all knowledge is given him of all things done in heaven and earth, and this as Son of man too: his knowledge and power being of equall extent. He is the *Sunne* as well in respect of *knowledge*, as of *Righteousnesse*, and there is nothing hid from his light and beames, which doe pierce the darkest corners of the hearts of the sonnes of men: He knowes the *sores* (as *Solomon* expresseth it) and distresses of their hearts. Like as a looking-glasse made into the forme of a round globe, and hung in the midst of a roome, takes in all the species of things done, or that are therein, at once; so doth the enlarged

larged understanding of Christs humane nature take in the affaires of this world, (which he is appointed to govern;) especially the miseries of his members; and this at once. Part. 3.

2. His humane nature thus knowing all, [*I know thy works, thy labour, and thy patience, &c. Rev.* 2.] He therewithall hath an act of memory, and recals how himselfe was once affected, and how distressed whilst on earth, under the same or the like miseries: For the memory of things here below remaines still with him, as with all spirits in either of those two other worlds, heaven or hell. [*Son, remember thou in thy life time receivedst thy good things, and* Lazarus *evill, &c.* sayes *Abraham* to the soule of *Dives* in hell, *Luke* 16. 25. [*Remember me when thou commest into thy Kingdome*] said the good theefe to Christ; And *Revel.* 1. *I am he* (sayes Christ) *that was dead, and am alive*: He remembers his death still, and the sufferings of it; and as he remembers it, to put his Father in mind thereof, so he remembers it also, to affect his own heart with what we feele: And his memory presenting the impression

Part. 3. of the like now afresh unto him, how it was once with him; hence he comes feelingly & experimentally to know how it is now with us, and so affects himselfe therewith: as *Dido* in *Virgil*, *Haud ignara mali miseris succurrere disco*; Having experience of the like miseries, (though a Queene now) I know how to succour those that are therein: As God said to the Israelites when they should be possessed of *Canaan* their own land, *Exo.* 23. 9. *Ye know the hearts of strangers, seeing ye were strangers, &c.* and therefore doth command them to pitty strangers, and to use them well upon that motive: So may it be said of CHRIST, that he doth know *the hearts of his children* in misery, seeing himselfe was once under the like. Or as the Apostle exhorts the Hebrewes, *Heb.* 13. 3. *Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them, and them that suffer adversity, as being your selves [in the body,]* and so ere you dye, may come to suffer the like. So Christ, the *head* of the body, (which is the fountaine of all sense and feeling in the body) doth remember them that are bound and in adversity, having himselfe beene

once

once in the body; and so he experimentally compassionates them. And this is a further thing then the former: We have gained this further, That Christ hath not onely such affections as are reall and proper to an humane nature, but such affections as are stirred up in him, from experience of the like by himselfe once tasted in a fraile nature like unto ours. And thus much for the *way* of letting in all our miseries into Christs heart now, so as to strike and affect it with them. Part. 3.

§. II.

A more particular disquisition, What manner *of affection this is: The Seat thereof, whether in his spirit, or soule onely, or the whole humane nature. Some Cautions added.*

BUt concerning this Affection it selfe of pity and compassion, fellow-feeling, and sympathie, or *suffering with,* (as the Text calls it) which is the product, result, or thing produced in his heart by these; there still remaines another thing more particularly to be inquired into; namely, *What manner of affection* this is. For that such an affection is stirred up in him, besides and beyond a bare act of knowledge, or remembrance how once it was with himselfe, is evident by what we find in the Text. The Apostle sayes, not onely that he remembers how himselfe was tempted with the like infirmities that we are, (though that be necessarily supposed) but that he is struck and *touch't with the feeling of our infirmities*; to the producing

ducing of which, this act of remembrance doth but subserve. And he tels us, Christ is *able*, and his heart is capable of thus being toucht. And the word [συμπαθῆσαι] is a deep word, signifying to *suffer with us*, untill we are relieved. And this affection thus stirred up, is it which moveth him so cordially to help us. Part. 3.

Now concerning this affection, (as here thus expressed) how far it extends, and how deep it may reach, I think no man in this life can fathome. If *Cor Regis, the heart of a King be inscrutable*, (as *Solomon* speakes) the heart of the King of Kings now in glory is much more. I will not take upon me to *intrude into things which I have not seen*, but shall endeavour to speak safely, and therefore warily, so far as the light of Scripture and right reason shall warrant my way.

I shall set it forth three wayes:

1. *Negatively.*
2. *Positively.*
3. *Privatively.*

1. *Negatively*: It is certaine that this affection of sympathy or fellow-feeling in Christ is not in all things such a kind of affection as was in him

Part. 3. *in the dayes of his flesh.* Which is cleare by what the Apostle speakes of him and his affections then, *Heb.* 5. 7. *Who in the dayes of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong cryings and teares, was heard in that which he feared.* Where we see his converse and state of life here below, to be called by way of difference and distinction from what it is now in heaven, [*The dayes of his flesh:*] By [*flesh*] meaning not the substance of the humane nature, for he retaines that still; but the fraile quality of subjection to mortality, or passibility. So [*Flesh*] is usually taken; as when *all flesh* is said to *be grasse*; It is spoken of mans nature, in respect to its being subject to a fading, wearing, and decay, by outward casualties, or inward passions. So in this Epistle, *Chap.* 2. 14. *For as much as the children* (we his brethren) *did partake of flesh and bloud,* (that is, the frailties of mans nature) *he himselfe also tooke part of the same.* And accordingly the Apostle instanceth in the following words of that 14. *verse*, as in *death*, (which in the dayes of his flesh Christ was subject to) so also in such fraile passions and affections

affections as did work a ſuffering in him, and a wearing and waſting of his ſpirits; ſuch as paſſionate *ſorrow*, joyned with *ſtrong cryes* and *teares*, (both which he mentioneth) and alſo *feare*, (in thoſe words) [*He was heard in that which he feared.*] Now theſe *dayes of his fleſh* being over and paſt, (for this was onely (as ſayes the Apoſtle) *in the dayes of his fleſh*) hence therefore all ſuch concomitant paſſionate overflowings of *ſorrow*, *feare*, &c. are ceaſed therewith, and he is now no way capable of them, or ſubjected to them. Part. 3.

Yet (2.) *Poſitively*, why may it not be affirmed, that for ſubſtance, the ſame kinde of affection of pitty and compaſſion that wrought in his whole man both body and ſoule, when he was here, works ſtill in him now he is in heaven? (if this Poſition be allayed with thoſe due cautions and conſiderations which preſently I ſhall annexe) For, if for ſubſtance the ſame *fleſh* and *blood*, and animall ſpirits remain and have their uſe; (for though Chriſt in *Luke* 24. 39. mentioned only his having *fleſh* and *bones* after his reſurrection, unto *Thomas* and the

Part. 3. other Disciples, because these two alone were to be the object of his Touch and Feeling; yet *Blood and Spirits* are included in that *flesh*, for it is *caro vitalis*, *living flesh*, and therefore hath Blood and Spirits that flow and move in it,) then why not the same affections also? and those not stirring onely and meerly in the soule, but working in the body also, unto which that soule is joyned, and so remaining really humane affections? The use of blood and spirits is, as to nourish, (which end is now ceased) so to affect the heart and bowels by their motion to and fro, when the soule is affected. And why this use of them should not remaine, (and if not this, we can conceive no other) I know not. Neither why this affection should be onely restrained to his spirit or soule, and his corporeall powers not be supposed to communicate and partake in them. That so, as he is a true man, and the same man that he was, both in body as well as in soule, (for else it had not been a true Resurrection) so he hath still the very same true humane affections in them both: and such, as whereof the body

is

is the ſeat (and inſtrument) as well as the ſoule. And ſeeing this whole man both body and ſoule was tempted, and that (as the Text ſayes) he is *touched with a feeling* in that nature which is tempted, it muſt therefore be in the whole man, both body and ſoule. Therefore when as we read of the *wrath of the Lambe*, as *Revel. 6. 16.* (namely, againſt his enemies) as here of his pity and compaſſion (towards his friends and members) why ſhould this be attributed onely to his Deity, (which is not capable of wrath) or to his ſoule and ſpirit onely? And why may it not be thought he is truly angry as a man, in his whole man, and ſo with ſuch a wrath as his body is affected with, as well as that he is wrathfull in his ſoule onely; ſeeing he hath taken up our whole nature, on purpoſe to ſubſerve his Divine nature in all the executions of it? Part. 3.

But now, how farre (in our apprehenſions of this) we are to cut off the weakneſſe and frailty of ſuch affections as in the dayes of his fleſh was in them, and how exactly to difference thoſe which Chriſt had here, and thoſe which he hath in heaven, there-

in

Part. 3. in lyes the difficulty, and I can ſpeake but little unto it.

Yet firſt, this we may lay down as an undoubted Maxime, That ſo far, or in what ſenſe his Body it ſelfe is made *ſpirituall*, (as it is called, 1 *Cor.* 15. 44.) ſo far, and in that ſenſe all ſuch affections as thus working in his Body, are made *ſpirituall*; and that in an oppoſition to that fleſhly and fraile way of their working here. But then, as his Body is made *ſpirituall*, not *Spirit*, (*ſpirituall* in reſpect of power, and likeneſſe to a Spirit, not in reſpect of ſubſtance or nature) ſo theſe affections of pity and compaſſion doe work not only in his *Spirit* or Soule, but in his Body too, as their ſeat and inſtrument, though in a more ſpirituall way of working, and more like to that of Spirits, then thoſe in a fleſhly frail body are. They are not wholly ſpirituall in this ſenſe, that the ſoule is the ſole ſubject of them, and that it drawes up all ſuch workings into it ſelfe: ſo that *that* ſhould be the difference between his affections now, and in the dayes of his fleſh. Men are not to conceive, as if his body were turned into ſuch a ſubſtance as the Sun

is

is of, for the ſoule (as through a caſe of glaſſe) to ſhine gloriouſly in only; but further it is united to the ſoule, to be *acted* by it, (though immediately) for the ſoule to produce operations in it. And it is called *ſpirituall*, not that it remaines not a body, but becauſe it remaines not ſuch a body; but is ſo framed to the ſoule, that both it ſelfe and all the operations of all the powers in it, are immediately and entirely at the arbitrary *imperium* and dominion of the ſoule; and that, as the ſoule is pleaſed to uſe it, and to ſway it and move it, even as immediately and as nimbly (and without any clog or impediment) as an Angell moves it ſelfe, or as the ſoule acteth it ſelfe. So that this may perhaps be one difference, that theſe affections, ſo far as in the body of Chriſt, doe not affect his ſoule, (as here they did, though as then under the command of Grace and Reaſon, to keep their motions from being inordinate or ſinfull) but further, the ſoule being now too ſtrong for them, doth at its own arbitrement raiſe them, and as entirely and immediately ſtir them as it doth it ſelfe.

Hence

Part. 3. Hence 2. these affections of pity and sympathie so stirred up by himselfe, though they move his bowels, and affect his bodily heart as they did here; yet they doe not afflict and perturbe him in the least, nor become they a burthen and a load unto his spirit, so as to make him *sorrowfull* or *heavy*, (as in this life here his pity unto *Lazarus* made him, and as his distresses at last, that made him *sorrowfull unto death.*) So that, as in their rise, so in their effect, they utterly differ from what they were here below. And the reason of this is, because his Body, and the blood and spirits thereof, (the instruments of affecting him) are now altogether impassible; namely in this sense, that they are not capable of the least alteration tending to any hurt whatever: And so, his body is not subject to any griefe, nor his spirits to any waste, decay, or expence. They may, and doe subserve the soule in its affections, as they did whilst he was here; but this, meerly by a locall motion, moving to and fro in the veynes and arteries, to affect the heart and bowels, without the least diminution or

impaire

impaire to themſelves, or detriment to him. And thus it comes to paſſe, that though this Blood and ſpirits doe ſtir up the ſame affections in his heart and bowels, which here they did, yet not (as then) with the leaſt perturbation in himſelfe, or inconvenience unto himſelfe: But as in this life he was troubled and grieved [*without ſinne,*] or inordinacie; ſo now when he is in heaven he pities and compaſſionates *without* the leaſt mixture or tang of diſquietment and *perturbation* (which yet neceſſarily accompanied his affections whilſt he was here, becauſe of the frailty in which his body and ſpirits were framed:) His perfection *deſtroyes* not his affections, but onely *corrects* and amends the imperfection of them. *Paſſiones perfectivas* to be now in him, the beſt of Schoolemen doe acknowledge. Part. 3.

Thirdly, All naturall affections that have not in them *Indecentium ſtatus*, ſomething unbefitting that ſtate and condition of glory wherein Chriſt now is, both Schoole-men and other Divines doe acknowledge to be in him. *Humanæ affectiones quæ naturales ſunt, neque cum probro vel peccato*

Part. 3. *cato conjunctæ, sed omni ex parte rationi subduntur; denique ab iis conditionibus liberantur, quæ vel animo, vel corpori aliquo modo officiunt, Beatis nequaquam repugnare censendæ sunt.* Those affections which are naturall to man, and have no adhæsion of sinne or shame unto them, but are wholly governed by reason, and lastly are exempt from such effects as may any way hurt either the soule or the body, there is no ground to thinke that such affections may not well stand with the state of soules in blisse, sayes *Justinian* upon this place. Now if we consider it, Christ his very *state* in glory is such, as it becomes him to have such humane affections of pitty and compassion in his whole man; so far as to quicken and provoke him to our help and succour: not such as to make him *a man of sorrowes* in himselfe again, (that were uncomely, nay, incompatible to him) but such as should make him *a man of succours* unto us, which is his office. To this end it is to be remembred, that Christ in heaven is to be considered, not personally onely as in himselfe made happy in his Father; but withall in his relations.

ons and in his offices as an *Head* unto us, and in that relation he now sits there, as 1 *Ephes.* 21. 22. (and the head is the seat of all the senses for the good of the body) and therefore most sensible of any other part. Wherefore because his members unto whom he beares this relation, are still under sinne and misery, therefore it is no way uncomely for him in that estate to have affections suitable to this his relation. If his state of glory had been wholly ordained for his owne personall happinesse, then indeed there had been no use of such affections to remaine in him; but his relation to us being one part and ingredient of his glory; therefore they are most proper for him: yea, it were uncomely if he had them not. Neither are they a weaknesse in him, as so considered, but rather part of his *strength* (as the Apostle calls them) [δυναμις] And although such affections might in one respect be thought an imperfection; yet in another respect, (namely, his relation to us, and office for us) they are his perfection. As he is our Head, (which he is as he is a man) it is his glory to be truly and really (even as a man) Part. 3.

Part. 3. man) ſenſible of all our miſeries; yea it were his imperfection if he were not.

And 4. let me adde this for our comfort, that though all ſuch affections as are any way a burthen to his ſpirit, or noxious to his body, be not now compatible to him; and though that paſſionate frailty and infirmity which did help him here to pity and relieve men in miſery, out of a ſuffering hurtfull to himſelf; though theſe be cut off: yet in thoſe workings of affections and bowels, which he hath now, (which for ſubſtance are the ſame) there is (in ſtead of that paſſionate frailty) a greater capaciouſneſſe, vaſtneſſe, and alſo quickneſſe in his affections now in heaven, ſo to make up a compenſation; and ſo no leſſe effectually to ſtir and quicken him to relieve us, then thoſe former affections did. For it is certaine, that as his knowledge was enlarged upon his entring into glory; ſo his humane affections of love and pitty are enlarged in ſolidity, ſtrength, and reality, (as true conjugall love uſeth to be, though more paſſionate haply at firſt.) They are not leſſe now, but are onely made more ſpirituall.

And

And as *Salomons* heart was as large in bounty and royalty, as in knowledge; so Christs affections of Love are as large as his Knowledge or his Power: They are all of a like extent and measure. So far as Gods intention to shew mercy doth reach, (and who knowes the end of those riches?) so far doth Christs disposition to bestow it. *Ephes.* 3. 19. *The Love of Christ*, God-man, *passeth knowledge.* It hath not lost, or been diminished by his going to heaven. Though God in his *nature* be more mercifull then Christs humane nature, yet the *act* and exercise of Christs affections is as large as Gods purposes and decrees of mercy are. And all those large affections & mercies are become humane mercies; the mercies of a Man unto men. Part. 3.

3. Privatively. If these affections of Christs heart be not suffering and afflicting affections; yet we may by way of *Privation* expresse this of them, that there is a lesse fulnesse of joy and comfort in Christs heart, whilst he sees us in misery and under infirmities, comparatively to what will be when we are presented to him free of them all.

To

Part. 3. To cleare this, I must recall (and I shall but recall) that Distinction I made (in the 4. Demonstration, *Sect.* 2. *Part* 2.) of a double capacity of Glory, or a double fulnesse of Joy which Christ is ordained to have: The one Naturall, and so due unto his person as in himselfe alone considered; The other Additionall, and arising from the compleated happinesse and glory of his whole Church, (wherewith mystically he is one.) So in *Ephes.* 1. *ult.* although he by reason of his personall fulnesse is there said to *fill all in all*; yet as he is an *Head*, in relation to his Church as his body (as in the verses before he is spoken of) thus the perfection of this his bodies beatitude it is reciprocally called *his fulnes*; and therefore untill he hath filled them with all happinesse, and delivered them from all misery, himselfe remaines under some kinde of imperfection, and answerably his affections also (which are suited to this his relation) have some want of imperfection in them, whilst they lie under misery, in comparison of what his heart shall have when they receive this fulnesse. We may warrantably

say,

ſay, Chriſt ſhall be more glad then, (and is now) as his children are grown up from under their infirmities, and as they doe become more obedient and comfortable in their ſpirits; ſo *John* 15. 10, 11. I ſhall adde ſome illuſtration to this by this ſimilitude, (which though it hold not in all things, yet it will hold forth ſome ſhadow of it) The *ſpirits of juſt men*, departed, are ſaid to be *perfect*, *Heb.* 12. yet becauſe they have bodies unto which they have a relation, and unto which they are ordained to be united, they in this reſpect may be ſaid to be imperfect, till theſe bodies be re-united and glorified with them, which will adde a further fulneſſe to them. Thus in ſome analogie it ſtands between Chriſt Perſonall, and Chriſt Myſtically conſidered. Although Chriſt in his own *Perſon* be compleat in happineſſe; yet in relation to his members he is imperfect, and ſo accordingly hath affections ſuited unto this his relation: which is no derogation from him at all. The Scripture therefore attributes ſome affections to him which have an imperfection joyned with them; and thoſe Part. 3.

to

Part. 3. to be in him, untill the day of judgement. Thus *Expectation* and *Desire*, (which are but imperfect affections in comparison to that joy which is in the full fruition of what was expected or desired) are attributed to him, as he is man, untill the day of judgement. Thus *Heb.*10.12,13 *He* is said to *sit* in Heaven, *expecting till his enemies be made his foot-stoole.* The destruction of which enemies will adde to the manifestative glory of his kingdome. Now as that will adde to the fulnesse of his greatnesse; so the compleat salvation of his members will adde to the compleatnesse of his glory. And as the expectation of his enemies ruine may be said to be an imperfect affection, in comparison of the triumph that one day he shall have over them: so his joy which he now hath in his Spouse, is but imperfect, in comparison of that which shall fill his heart at the great day of Marriage. And accordingly, the Scripture calls the accomplishment of these his desires a *satisfaction*; so *Isai.* 63, 11. *He shall see of the travaile of his soule, and be satisfied*, which argues desires to be in him, lying under a want of some-

ſomething in the end to be obtained: Parr. 3.
Onely we muſt take in this withall, that Jeſus Chriſt indeed knowes and ſees the very time when this his fulneſſe through the exaltation of his members up to himſelfe ſhall be compleated, and when he ſhall trample upon the necks of all his and their enemies; He *ſees their day a comming*, (as the Pſalmiſt hath it) which alleviates and detracts ſomething from this imperfection, that he ſhould thus *expect* or *tarry*.

---

§. III.

This Scruple ſatisfied: How his heart can be ſeelingly touched with our Sins, (*our greateſt infirmities*) *ſeeing he was tempted* [without ſinne.]

THere remaines one great unſatisfaction to be removed, which cannot but of it ſelfe ariſe in every good heart. You told us, (may they ſay) that by [*infirmities*] *ſinnes* were meant, and that the Apoſtles ſcope was to encourage us againſt them alſo, (and they are indeed the greateſt diſcomforts and diſcouragements of all other) Now againſt them, this which

Part. 3. which the Apostle here speakes affordeth us but little, seeing Christ knows not how experimentally to pity us therein, for *he knew no sinne*: Yea, the Apostle himselfe doth here except it, *He was tempted in all things*, [*yet without sinne.*] It may comfort us indeede, that Christ doth and will pitie us in all other infirmities, because he himselfe was subject to the like; but hee never knew what it was to be under sinne, and vexed with a lust, (as I am,) and how shall I relieve my selfe against that, by what the Apostle here speaks of him? I shall endeavor to give some satisfaction and reliefe in this, by these following considerations.

First, the Apostle puts in indeede, that *hee was tempted* [*yet without sin*] and it was well for us that hee was thus without sinne, for hee had not beene a fit Priest to have saved us else: so *Heb.* 7. 25. *Such an High-Priest became us as was separate from sinners, innocent &c.* Yet for your relief withall consider, that he came as neere in that point as might be, [*he was tempted in all things*] so sayes the Text, though *without sinne* on his part; yet tempted

tempted *to all ſinne*, ſo farre as to be afflicted in thoſe temptations, and to ſee the miſery of thoſe that are tempted, and to know how to pitty them in all ſuch temptations. Even as in taking our nature, in his birth, he came as neere as could be, without being tainted with originall ſinne, as namely, by taking the very ſame matter to have his body of that all ours are made of, &c. So in the point of actuall ſinne alſo he ſuffered himſelfe to be tempted as farre as might be, ſo as to keep himſelfe pure. He ſuffered all experiments to be tryed upon him by Satã, even as a man who hath taken a ſtrong antidote, ſuffers conclusions to be tryed on him by a Mountibank. And indeede, becauſe he was thus tempted by Satan unto ſinne, therefore it is on purpoſe added, [*yet without ſinne,*] And it is as if he had ſaid, ſinne never ſtained him, though he he was outwardly tempted to it. He was tempted to all ſorts of ſinnes by Satan, for thoſe three temptations in the wilderneſſe were the heads of all ſorts of temptations, (as Interpreters upon the Goſpels doe ſhew. Part. 3.

Part. 3. Then Secondly, To fit him to pitty us in case of sinne, he was vext with the filth and power of sinne in others whom he conversed with, more then any of us with sinne in our selves. His *righteous soule was vexed* with it, as *Lots* righteous soule is said to have been with the impure conversation of the Sodomites. He *endured the contradictions of sinners* against himselfe, *Heb.* 12. 3. *The reproaches of them that reproached thee*, (that is, upon his God) *fell upon me*, *Rom.* 15. 3. It was spoken by the Psalmist of Christ, and so is quoted of him by the Apostle: that is, every sinne went to his heart. So as in this, there is but this difference betwixt him and us, That the regenerate part in us is vexed with sinne in our selves, and that as our own sinne; but his heart with sinne in others onely: yet so, as his vexation was the greater, by how much his soule was more righteous then ours which makes it up; yea, in that he sustained the persons of the elect, the sinnes which he saw them commit troubled him, as if they had been his own. The word here translated *Tempted*, is read by some [περιεχόμενον] that is, *vexed*.

Yea,

Yea, and Thirdly, to help this also, it may be said of Christ whilst he was here below, that in the same sense or manner wherein he *bore our sicknesses*, *Mat.* 8. 17. (who yet was never personally tainted with any disease) in the same sense or manner he may be said to have borne our sinnes; namely thus: Christ when he came to an elect child of his that was sick, whom he healed; his manner was, first by a sympathie and pitty to afflict himselfe with their sickneſſe, as if it had been his own: Thus at his raising of *Lazarus*, it is said that he *groaned in spirit*, &c. and so by the merit of taking the disease upon himselfe, through a fellow-feeling of it, he tooke it off from them, being for them afflicted: as if he himselfe had been sick. And this seemes to be the best interpretation that I have met with, of that difficult place in *Mat.* 8. 16. 17. where it is said, *He healed all that were sick, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the Prophet, saying, Himselfe took our infirmities* [*and bare our sicknesses.*] Now in the like way or manner unto this, of bearing our sicknesses, he might beare our sinnes too; for he Part. 3.

Part. 3. being one with us, and to answer for all our sinnes, therefore when he saw any of his owne to sinne, he was affected with it, as if it had been his own. And thus is that about the power of sinne made up and satisfied.

And Fourthly, as for the guilt of sinne, and the temptations from it, he knowes more of that then any one of us. He tasted the bitternesse of that, in the imputation of it, more deeply then we can, and of the cup of his Fathers wrath for it, and so is able experimentally to pitty a heart wounded with it, and struggling under such temptations. He knowes full well the heart of one in his own sense forsaken by God, seeing himselfe felt it, when he cryed out, *My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?*

Uses

Uses of all.

1. THus that which hath beene said may afford us the ſtrongeſt conſolations & encouragements againſt our ſinnes of any other conſideration whatſoever, and may give us the greateſt aſſurance of their being removed off from us, that may be: for, *Uſe 1.*

Firſt, Chriſt himſelfe ſuffers (as it were) at leaſt is affected under them as his enemies, which therefore he will be ſure to remove, for his owne quiet ſake. His heart would not be quiet, but that he knowes they ſhall be removed. As God ſayes in the Prophet, ſo may Chriſt ſay much more, *My Bowels are troubled for him, I remember him ſtill. Jeremiah* 31. 20.

Secondly, there is comfort concerning ſuch infirmities, in that your very ſinnes move him to pittie more then to anger. This text is plaine for it, for he ſuffers with us under our infirmities; and by infirmities are meant ſins, as well as other miſeries, (as was

Part. 3. proved:) whilst therefore you look on them as infirmities, (as God here lookes upon them, and speaks of them in his owne) and as your disease, and complaine to Christ of them, and doe cry out, *O miserable man that I am, who shall deliver me?* so long feare not. Christ he takes part with you, and is so farre from being provoked against you, as all his anger is turned upon your sinne to ruine it; yea his pittie is increased the more towards you, even as the heart of a father is to a childe that hath some loathsome disease, or as one is to a member of his body that hath the leprosie, he hates not the member, for it is his flesh, but the disease, and that provokes him to pittie the part affected the more. What shall not make for us, when our sinns that are both against Christ and us, shall bee turned as motives to him, to pity us the more? The object of pity is one in misery whom we love; and the greater the misery is, the more is the pity, when the party is beloved: Now of all miseries, sin is the greatest; and whilst your selves look at it as such, Christ will looke upon it as such only also in you. And

he

he loving your persons, and hating only the sinne; his hatred shall all fall, and that only upon the sinne to free you of it by its ruine and destruction, but his bowels shall bee the more drawn out to you; and this as much when you lie under sin, as under any other affliction. Therefore feare not, *What shall separate us from Christs love.* Part. 3.

What ever tryall, or temptation, or miserie we are under, we may comfort our selves with this, that Christ was once under the same, or some one like unto it, which may comfort us in these three differing respects that follow, by considering *Use 2.*

Fitst, that we are thereby but conformed to his example, for he was tempted in all, and this may be no small comfort unto us.

Secondly, we may look to that particular instance of Christs being under the like, as a meriting cause to procure and purchase succour for us under the same now; and so in that respect may yet further comfort our selves. And

Thirdly, his having once born the like, may relieve us in this, that therefore he experimentally knowes the mi-

Part. 3. miserie and distresse of such a condition, and so is yet further moved and quickned thereby to helpe us.

Use 3. As the Doctrine delivered is a *comfort*, so the greatest *motive* against sin, and [illegible] into obedience; to consider, that Christs heart if it bee not afflicted with, (and how farre it may suffer with us we know not) yet for certain hath lesse joy in us, as we are more or lesse sinfull, or obedient. You know not by sinning what blows you give the heart of Christ: If no more but that his joy is the lesse in you, it should move you, as it useth to doe those that are ingenuous. And take this as one incentive to obedience, that if he retain the same heart and mind for mercy towards you which he had here on earth: Then to answere his love, endevor you to have the same heart towards him on earth, which you hope to have in heaven; and as you daily pray, *Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven.*

Use 4. In all miseries and distresses you may be sure to know where to have a friend to help and pity you, even in heaven, *Christ*; one whose nature, office, interest, relation, all, doe engage

gage him to your ſuccour; you will finde men, even friends, to be oftentimes unto you unreaſonable, and their bowels in many caſes ſhut up towards you. Well, ſay to them all, If you will not pity me, *Chooſe, I know one that will*, one in heaven whoſe *heart is touched with the feeling of all my infirmities*, and I will goe and bemoan my ſelfe to him. *Come boldly*, (ſayes the Text) μετὰ παῤῥησίας, even with *open mouth*, to lay open your complaints, and *you ſhall finde grace and mercy to helpe in time of neede.* Men love to ſee themſelves pityed by friends though they cannot *helpe them:* Chriſt can and will doe both. Part. 3.

FINIS.